

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1052 Your Grandfather Is a Dog? - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1052 Your Grandfather Is a Dog?

Chapter 1052 Your Grandfather Is a Dog?

Su Ming said those words casually, his expression remaining as calm as ever without a single change, but a freezing glare had already appeared in his eyes. The arrogant young man in front of him was not enough for Su Ming to feel an emotion change to the point where one of the three personalities would appear, or more accurately speaking, this young man did not have the right to see the gray or crimson Su Ming.

His voice was still echoing in the galaxy. Even though he had not spoken loudly, it sounded as if there was thunder roaring in space, and the young man with the primitive and savage presence was momentarily stunned. He then started laughing loudly. The dozens of cultivators beside him had mocking smiles, and there was an air of those who were thought themselves supreme in their expressions, a contemptuous attitude towards Su Ming and his group.

"Interesting, you want to hang my head on the bow of your ship? Have you trained so much that you went mad? Or is it because you've become so excited after you were conferred the title of a Dynast that you forgot yourself? Who gave you the right to talk to me like that?" Powerful killing intent rose swiftly in the young man's eyes. As he spoke, the arrogance in his laughter became even stronger.

In truth, it was hard to blame the young man for being so arrogant. At that moment, Flame Fiends' Progenitor had restrained his power upon stepping into True Morning Dao World. He was dressed in a crimson long robe, with his head covered. After all, they were in True Morning Dao World, and as a member of the alien race from Divine Essence Star Ocean, he was filled with uneasiness towards that place, so he had instinctively hidden his presence.

As for Zhu You Cai, if he did not have the mighty pressure formed by his cultivation base spreading out from his power, other people would find it hard to figure out his level of cultivation. At that moment, he only seemed like he was around World Plane Realm.

In the young man's eyes, besides Xu Hui being in Lunar Kalpa Realm, only Su Ming alone could pressure him slightly, but since he had dared to come there, he would naturally have confidence in himself.

As his words echoed in the galaxy, Su Ming replied flatly with a calm expression.

"I'll give you ten breaths. Kill all of his followers first."

Su Ming's calm words were filled with a harsh tone. They echoed in the people's ears, but only appeared in the heart of Flame Fiends' Progenitor, so he would understand that they were directed at him.

A wild and untamed laughter came from beneath the crimson long robe, and the instant it spread through the galaxy, it stirred up a large amount of ripple. Flame Fiends' Progenitor wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming.

"Don't worry, Your Highness."

Once he finished speaking, he took a step forward. When his foot landed, he stepped into the galaxy. It roared, and a huge vortex appeared beneath his foot. The vortex's appearance immediately caused the galaxy around him to start moving backwards like flowing water, and the pupils of followers beside the young men shrank.

When Flame Fiends' Progenitor stepped into the galaxy, his wild laughter spread out, and he slowly raised his head. He stretched out his claw-like, dried-up right hand and slowly pulled back the crimson hood over his head to reveal the emaciated, ugly face. His red pupils seemed to contain burning flames in them, and at that moment, he looked like an evil monster who had descended into the world. At the instant he revealed his face, his power also erupted from his body without any holding back.

The power of an Almighty in Mastery Realm spread out through the galaxy with loud booming sounds, causing the young man's expression to change drastically. His followers had had derision on their faces, but at that moment, their expressions changed into shock and disbelief.

It brought great joy to Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Just as he was about to say something while laughing wildly...

"Seven!"

The bald crane was someone who craved nothing but chaos in the universe. At that moment, a thought formed in its head, and it immediately shouted a number in correspondence to Su Ming's order just then.

Once the bald crane shouted the number, all the people beside Su Ming looked towards it with a strange expression. Flame Fiends' Progenitor shouted loudly and took a step forward to close in on the young man.

All of this happened at lightning speed. The young man's face instantly turned pale.

"A... A Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!"

No matter what, he had not expected that there would be an Almighty who was a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death beside Dao Kong. Almighties were incredibly noble

existences in his heart. He might be a direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect, but he did not have the right to have the sect send this sort of person to his side.

His mind was blank at that moment. It was also during that moment that shrill screams of pain came from one of his followers' mouths. That man's body was engulfed in flames before being reduced to ashes. Only his pained screams were still echoed in space.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor licked his lips and walked out of the space where the cultivator had disappeared.

"Nine!" the bald crane immediately shouted at the top of its lungs.

Anger appeared in the eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. He did not have time to talk about anything else and brought his arms up before swinging them sideways. A purple sea of fire erupted from his body and turned into a gigantic palm of flames.

It seized the space upwards. If anyone was to look over from the distance, the palm of flames that was around one million feet big would look as if it occupied the whole galaxy.

As it went to seize the space upwards, the galaxy rumbled. Ripples spread out. When the universe trembled, all the followers beside the young were reduced to ashes. Beside the young man and the gigantic egg under his feet were gone. In fact, they did not even have time to scream in pain before their bodies and souls were destroyed.

When the palm of flames disappeared, there was a smug tone in the bald crane's piercing screech as it reverberated in space. "Ten, darn it all! It's been ten breaths, and you didn't complete your orders!"

Flame Fiends' Progenitor turned his head around and glared at the bald crane. At that moment, Dao Fei Feng, who was on top of the huge egg in the galaxy in front of Su Ming looked at them with pale face. Shock and panic was in his eyes. When the palm of flames had closed in on him, he had a strong feeling that he was about to die. If the strange egg had not sent forth its gentle power to surround him at the end, then the strike just then would have been the final scene he saw in his life.

He suddenly felt that he was a laughable fool. He had been so arrogant and had even specially waited for Dao Kong and his group with the intention of intimidating him so that he would give up on his title as a Dynast on his own.

To him, no matter how strong Dao Kong was, he was not his opponent. Most of the followers he brought were in the later stage of World Plane Realm. There were even three of them who were in Lunar Kalpa Realm, and Dao Fei Feng himself was between Lunar Kalpa Realm and Solar Kalpa Realm. Such a level of cultivation and force of power had caused him to be incredibly confident.

In fact, he had even thought that Dao Kong's words just then had been ridiculously funny. His orders about beheading him and putting his head on the bow of the ship had brought out a need to mock him, and he had also wanted to see just what caused Dao Kong to be so confident.

However... Dao Kong's expression had never changed. He only mentioned casually that he would only give ten breaths to complete his order, and Dao Fei Feng had lost all his followers in a moment.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor glared at the bald crane. When he saw that Su Ming's expression remained the same and did not change, he became nervous and quickly turned around with killing intent to stare at Dao Fei Feng, who was the only one left.

"Damn it, why didn't you die just now?"

Flame Fiends' Progenitor might be an Almighty, but he was not a cultivator and had not come to possess his level of cultivation through epiphanies. Instead, with his inborn ability from his race, he had gained his power by devouring plenty of his people. Only then did he obtain his power, which was why his emotions fluctuated a lot more. At that moment, he was worried that Su Ming was already displeased with him, which was why he directed all his resentment on the young man who did not die. As he spoke, he charged towards him.

"I am a direct descendant from Morning Dao Sect. This is a fight between us in the family. Senior, please... please don't interfere. This is a competition between the members of Morning Dao Sect..."

Dao Fei Feng's expression changed. The huge egg beneath him swiftly retreated while his pleas tumbled out of his mouth.

"Senior, which chamber do you belong to? I have the order from the Sect Elder Chamber with me, please do not attack!"

As Dao Fei Feng retreated, he brought out a white plate from his bosom while speaking loudly. He was anxious and nervous, but he was also confident that once he brought the plate out, the Almighty from Morning Dao Sect before him would hesitate for a moment.

"Darn you and your Sect Elder Chamber!" Flame Fiends' Progenitor roared, subconsciously using the bald crane's catchphrase. He rushed forward, and in Dao Fei Feng's disbelieving gaze, he closed in on him. The huge egg shuddered, and a gentle screen of light appeared, so Flame Fiends' Progenitor attack landed on it and not the young man.

With a bang, the screen of light started swaying furiously, and Dao Fei Feng was shaken so badly by the tremors that he coughed up a mouthful of blood.

"You aren't dead yet?"

Flame Fiends' Progenitor immediately felt as if anger was out to burn him from the inside. He was a great Almighty, but he could not kill a small cultivator who was halfway into Solar Kalpa Realm within two consecutive attacks. All of that might have been due to the peculiarity of the huge egg, but with the others watching, it became something incredibly embarrassing for Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

Th smug and contemptuous laughter from the bald crane was especially aggravating.

"Die! Die! DIE!"

Flame Fiends' Progenitor charged forward, and ooming sounds reverberated in the galaxy. A screen of light stirred up from the huge egg. It continued distorting before it eventually crumbled with a bang. As it shattered into pieces, Dao Fei Feng coughed up blood again. His body withered, and he looked as if he had lost half his life. Fear and terror that had never appeared in his eyes before showed up.

"Ancestor, please save me!"

At the instant his words were spoken, cracks spread through the gigantic egg beneath him. A black head of a dog rushed out from within to bite Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

"Huh? Your ancestor is a dog? Damn it, and it's even a black dog! This is a humiliation! You're humiliating me!" The bald crane had originally been content with just watching the fun, but at that moment, it glared at the dog and became unreasonably angry.

Chapter 1053 Who Even Are You?

Su Ming's expression had not changed since the start. It did not matter to him what status this Dao Fei Feng had or what sort of person existed behind him. Since he dared to block him, then his end was already determined.

Since Su Ming had returned to True Morning Dao World, he would not choose to keep a low profile. All those who provoked him would have to come face to face with his killing intent. He would kill until he became infamous, kill until the heavens were overturned, kill until he became a nightmare that would cause others to shiver, and kill... until he became a memory that would cause people to quiver even after many years has passed in True Morning Dao World.

As the bald crane wailed at the top of its lungs, the huge egg beneath Dao Fei Feng shattered. Its howls reverberated in space... and a gigantic beast with seven heads stepped out.

Those seven heads were all dog heads, and they were packed densely on the ferocious beast's single neck, causing it to look incredibly frightening. Its entire body was black. At that moment, all seven dog heads howled and charged toward Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

With an indifferent expression, Su Ming raised his right hand.

"All battleships, activate the power of the Rune and attack." Su Ming's right hand fell to point at the spot where Dao Fei Feng stood.

When he said those words, the hearts of all the cultivators on the battleships around him froze. However, they instantly sat down and activated the Rune. Right away, the battleships shone with a dazzling light, and waves of destructive presence spread in all directions.

When the presence from the battleships appeared, Dao Fei Feng's expression changed drastically.

"Y-y-you... this is a battle between us. I can let the fact that you asked your follower to attack me slide, but how dare you use the power of the battleships!"

Almost the moment he said those words, the galaxy shuddered. A loud bang surged into the heavens. During that instant, all the battleships activated their Runes at full speed. With loud rumbling sounds, hundreds of light pillars shot out to charge towards Dao Fei Feng.

The galaxy trembled. The loud bangs were even louder than thunder. The light pillars all landed where Dao Fei Feng stood. If the seven-headed beast had not swiftly moved in front of him to protect him, then that place would have been reduced into emptiness, and the already heavily injured Dao Fei Feng would have been injured even more.

But even though he was protected, the seven-headed ferocious beast had been forced to take the full brunt of the attack from the hundreds of light pillars. In the midst of the booming sounds, it was forced back continuously. At the instant the booming ended, the ferocious beast let out a loud wail. It was reduced to a bloody mess, but it turned around swiftly to glare at Su Ming before seizing Dao Fei Feng in its mouth and changing into a long arc to charge into the distance, intending to escape.

Anger flashed in the eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. He felt incredibly outraged by the events that happened due to his level of cultivation. First was that huge and strange egg putting a stop to his divine ability, and next came that ferocious beast. It had thick skin and could even withstand his divine ability head-on. This caused Flame Fiends' Progenitor to suddenly suspect that... his level of cultivation had regressed when he entered True Morning Dao World.

But the moment he wanted to give chase, a freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. With a calm gaze, he took a step forward, and when his foot landed, he moved past Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Then, he took another step forward to appear in the distant galaxy, right in front of the seven-headed ferocious beast.

A ruthless glare shone in the ferocious beast's eyes. At the instant killing intent shone in the eyes of Dao Fei Feng, who was still in the beast's mouth, Su Ming brought his right hand up and gave the ferocious beast a seemingly casual slap.

"You overestimate yourself. Without that Almighty beside you, a puny cultivator like you is just asking for death!" Dao Feng let out a low growl. But just as he was about to fly out, the pupils of the seven-headed ferocious beast shrank in disbelief.

A... power that surpassed the Almighties in Mastery Realm erupted from Su Ming's single strike. It could easily destroy a planet and collapse an entire galaxy. In fact, even if Almighties in Fate Realm ran into it, their hearts would tremble. And that strike landed on the ferocious beast.

With a bang, Su Ming's palm pressed on space, and the ferocious beast screamed shrilly in pain. Its body fell backwards as blood gushed out of it. Six of the seven heads exploded at the same time. As they were reduced to bloody mess, even Dao Fei Feng was affected by the remnants of that power. He coughed up fresh blood, and his body was flung outwards. This scene caused Dao Fei Feng to shudder. Blood flowed out nonstop from his mouth, and when he looked at Su Ming, his gaze was filled with disbelief and stupefaction.

The ferocious beast which only had one head left had a muddled consciousness at that moment. There was no longer any thought about saving Dao Fei Feng in its head. The only thing that remained was to run! With every ounce of its strength, it had to run away.

It sensed a presence that caused it to tremble from Su Ming. That presence might be barely discernible, but it was... a power that seemed to be able to destroy the entire universe.

Su Ming had an indifferent expression on his face. As he stood in the galaxy, he lifted his right hand, and immediately, a purple-black fog surrounded his arm to turn into the Life Inequity Spear. Once he held it in his hand, he threw it towards the dog-headed beast fleeing into the distance.

The Life Inequity Spear charged forward with a strange whistle to form a long arc. It ripped through the galaxy and sliced through space. The whistles sounded like Life Inequity Spear's soul crying out in excitement. There was an excitement contained in them that seemed filled with a wish to destroy all lives. With a loud bang, it pierced the dog-headed beast's neck, dragging its large body towards the battleships.

With a bang, the Life Inequity Spear shot into the hundreds of battleships. It might have pierced the bow of the gigantic ship that belonged to Su Ming, but it did not destroy the ship's structure. Instead... it pinned the ferocious dog's body to the ship.

All of this might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, it only took the span of a few breaths before it was over. It was so quick that it caused the people in the area to instantly fall into dead silence. With a calm expression, Su Ming turned around and looked towards the dazed Dao Fei Feng not too far away.

Su Ming's previous words surfaced once again in Dao Fei Feng's mind at that moment. The words which he had thought were ludicrous and had even regarded with derision and scorn were incredibly sharp when they appeared in his head again. They made him tremble, and realize that he had been incredibly presumptuous.

An expression of anguish appeared on his face. When he saw Su Ming taking a step forward, about to approach him, he swiftly retreated while speaking urgently.

"Direct descendants from Morning Dao Sect are forbidden from killing each other. This is my fault, and I'm willing to suffer the consequences for it, I..."

Before he could finish speaking, Su Ming's foot had already landed, and he appeared in front of Dao Fei Feng. He did not say a single thing, but lifted his right hand to seize Dao Fei Feng's throat.

Behead him and hang his head on the bow of the ship—those were Su Ming's previous words, and he would not change them.

"If you kill me, then you have to suffer the punishment from the Council of Sect Masters!" Dao Fei Feng's face turned pale, and despair appeared on his face. As he screamed forlornly, he wanted to dodge his grip. He could sense the killing intent from Su Ming, and that killing intent was so great that just a slight sense of it caused his heart to tremble.

His answer was a cold harrumph from Su Ming. His right arm seemed to slice through the galaxy as if he was cutting through butter with a hot knife. In an instant, he closed in on Dao Fei Feng and went to seize his neck. However, the moment Su Ming's right arm was about to touch Dao Fei Feng, his expression distorted, and he let out the strongest roar in his life.

"Grandfather, save me! Save me!"

With a loud bang, a powerful force tore through the galaxy from the void and forcefully appeared behind Dao Fei Feng in the shape of an old arm that seized Dao Fei Feng's shoulder. That arm yanked his body and changed his position. At the same time, the person who appeared out of nowhere lifted his other arm and crashed it against Su Ming's incoming grip.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Su Ming moved, and the person who had walked out of the void and saved Dao Fei Feng coughed up a mouthful of blood. He staggered several hundreds of feet backwards. When he lifted his head, an old face was revealed. It was an old man who was dressed in a gray, long robe and was filled with an Immortal's air.

He stared at Su Ming in shock, and there was astonishment in his eyes. As he yanked Dao Fei Feng to retreat with him, he spoke urgently,

"I am a Dao Hua Lin, a Great Sect Elder in Sect Elder Chamber. Your Highness, please allow me to save face. I will definitely repay you in the future."

"Help you save face?" Su Ming said faintly. When he lifted his foot, a gigantic moon appeared behind him. At the instant it did, a great commotion rose up. It came from the cultivators on the hundreds of battleships, and it also came from... the old man in gray, and also Dao Fei Feng, who was stupefied again while coughing up blood due to the severe injuries he had suffered.

At the instant the gigantic moon appeared, Su Ming took a step and instantly closed in on the old man. He brought up his right hand, formed a seal, and the moon behind him shone with a piercing tri-colored light.

The old man's expression changed drastically. Immediately, he bit the tip of his tongue, and after he coughed up blood, he shouted towards the blood he coughed up. It shuddered and turned into blood fog before turning into a gigantic ferocious head that had its mouth opened to swallow Su Ming.

Boom!

At the instant his finger touched the head made of blood fog, it collapsed into bits. The old man's face turned pale. He was forced back again, and during that process, he roared.

"You aren't the real Dynast yet! You killed your fellow sect members and disrespected the Sect Elder Chamber! Don't blame me for working with the sect elders to strip you off of your right as a Dynast! Would you want another friend or another enemy?! Dao Kong, give me an answer!"

The old man might have looked a little disheveled and pathetic, but as he spoke, there was an air of him standing high above others. Clearly, as a Great Sect Elder from the Sect Elder Chamber, he had become used to such an attitude, since it was his usual bearing on normal days.

"Who even are you?" Su Ming asked flatly.

Chapter 1054 The Blood Light in the Galaxy

"You!" When the old man heard it, anger immediately appeared in his eyes. Since he was one of the Great Sect Elders in the Sect Elder Chamber, every single person who met him in the galaxy would be polite to him, trembling in nervousness, and when they spoke, there would be caution and respect in their voices.

Since he had Dao as his family name, which mean that he was a direct descendant of the Dao Family, he still had quite a high status. There were very few people who would refute him. He was used to people obeying his every word when he spoke, for most people cared about helping him save face. That was why when he came face to face with Su Ming, that one sentence asking him about who he was instantly caused rage to rise in his heart.

"Very well, very well!" Burning with extreme anger, he swung his arm while smiling coldly. "I'd like to see whether you have the courage to kill two fellow sect members from the same family in succession!" As he let out a cold snort, the old man seized Dao Fei Feng and turned around.

Just as he was about to leave...

With a calm expression, Su Ming lifted a foot and took a step forward. The gigantic moon behind him shone with a tri-colored light. When it spread through the galaxy, Su Ming's foot landed and he appeared right next to the old man.

By the time the old man turned around, Su Ming had already stretched out his right hand at the speed of lightning. He went to seize the old man, who roared loudly, bit the tip of his tongue, and coughed up a layer of blood fog. However, almost at the moment that fog formed, Su Ming declared flatly, "Scatter!"

When he said that, the gigantic tri-colored moon behind him shone even brighter. Immediately, the galaxy around him looked as if its laws had scattered before gathering together again. As the invisible laws changed, the blood fog scattered at the speed of lightning. The moment it happened, Su Ming's right hand appeared in front of the old man. He seized Dao Fei Feng, and when he yanked him backwards, he dragged the pale-stricken and despair-filled youth from the old man's hands.

"Grandfather, save me, save me..."

Dao Fei Feng was scared out of his wits. The fear in his heart had reached its peak, for he could sense a merciless coldness from Su Ming. As he was pleading for help forlornly, Su Ming flung his right arm, and when he unfurled his fingers, Dao Fei Feng's body was swept away by a great force. He turned into a long arc and rushed toward the fleet of battleships.

With a bang, his pained screams reached their loudest point, and then he was impaled by the hilt of Life Inequity Spear, which was nailed to the bow of the ship.

His chest was pierced through, and together with the dog-headed beast, he was impaled at the bow of the ship. His body convulsed, and a large amount of blood trickled out from his mouth. His eyes gradually grew dull, his head rolled to the side, and he breathed his last.

His Nascent Divinity and soul had been crushed the instant he was stabbed by the Life Inequity Spear.

The area was filled with dead silence. Even the cultivators who belonged to Su Ming on the battleships did not make a sound, staring at Su Ming in shock. After all, killing fellow sect members was strictly prohibited within Morning Dao Sect, so Su Ming... had clearly committed a great offense.

However, Xu Hui's expression remained the same. The nine old Frail Darknesses by her side also did not exhibit any change, as if they were not too worried even though Dao Fei Feng had died.

This scene shocked the old man from the Sect Elder Chamber. He was momentarily stunned, then red appeared in his eyes. Disbelief lingered in them as they glared at Su Ming.

"One of the duties of those in the Sect Elder Chamber is to monitor the people in the family, and we have the right to kill all those who go against the rules of the sect! Dao Kong, you are a direct descendant of our family yet you killed a fellow family member and broke the rules.

"For the offense you've committed, your cultivation base should be destroyed, and an entire galaxy will suppress you until your body and soul are destroyed to serve as a warning for others! With my status as the Great Sect Elder in the Sect Elder Chamber, I bear witness that you... are a criminal!" the old man roared.

The enmity in his eyes was incredibly clear. As he spoke, he lifted his right hand, and immediately, a white plate appeared on his palm. He struck it with his left hand, and the ruthlessness and the venom in his voice was incredibly distinct.

"Dao Fei Feng was the one who provoked us first. With provocative words, he intended to challenge His Highness' right. This is Dynast Dao Kong's first challenger. Based on the orders the Progenitor sent several years ago while he was in isolation, once the heirs appear, the survival of challengers from the sect will not be brought into consideration!" Xu Hui smiled faintly. She lifted her right hand as well, and a blue plate appeared on her palm. At the instant it was brought out, ripples of power immediately spread out from it.

"The Sect Master's plate!"

The old man's expression changed drastically as he stared at the plate in Xu Hui's palm. He took a few staggering steps back, and a complicated look appeared on his face. At that moment, he remembered that even as well. It had been many years since heirs had appeared in Morning Dao Sect, which was why he had overlooked the status and power of Dynasts. He then also remembered the Progenitor sending an order while in isolation stating that those who challenged heirs would forfeit their lives upon loss.

"You are Dao Fei Feng's grandfather. Are you... going to challenge me as well?" Su Ming asked faintly.

That question was like an invisible slap that struck the old man's face, and his expression changed a couple times. Without a single word, he then turned around and changed into a long arc that left swiftly.

Su Ming did not stop the old man. He stared at him leaving into the distance before turning around to walk toward the fleet of battleships. When he reached Flame Fiends' Progenitor, he came to a halt.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor heart let out a thump.

"There will be no next time," Su Ming said faintly, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor quickly lowered his head to show his obedience.

While doing so, he let out a huge sigh of relief in his heart. When he first came into contact with Su Ming in their journey to the fifth kiln, he had regarded the other in derision. But when he showed hostility towards him, his physical body was destroyed, and derision turned into wariness. Then, he plotted against the descendant of Ancient Wu with Su Ming, and the series of things they went through made Flame Fiends' Progenitor to be incredibly wary of Su Ming.

At some point it had changed into respect, and then to fear when they left the fifth kiln and headed to the fifth ocean. In fact, a strange sort of thought had risen in him—as long as he followed Su Ming, then no matter how great the danger they ran into, he would be able to resolve it.

Because of it, Flame Fiends' Progenitor decided to follow Su Ming willingly after just one sentence. With time, his respect become grown greater, and it had already become etched into his soul.

At that moment, as he stared at Su Ming's back, he lowered his head and pulled the crimson hood over his head before returned to the battleship. After a moment, as the hundreds of battleships rumbled, they continued in the direction of Morning Dao Sect. They sliced through space and charged forward.

At the center of the battleships was Su Ming's gigantic battleship, and on its bow was the Life Inequity Spear, nailing... the dog-headed ferocious beast and Dao Fei Feng's corpse.

Time trickled by slowly, and five days gradually passed. During them, Su Ming and his crew passed through several planets, and all the races they ran into would all venture into the galaxy to greet him.

They had also run into several direct descendants of the Dao Family, but when they saw Dao Fei Feng's corpse hanging on the bow of Su Ming's ship, their expressions changed drastically, and all of them turned around and left without any hesitation.

The dead bodies were a blatant deterrent. With them, Su Ming could get rid of many unnecessary disturbances, so the fleet of battleships intimidated everyone wherever he went.

When the fifth day was over, Su Ming stared at the galaxy in the distance, and his pupils shrank slightly.

When he stood near the railing, he could vaguely see a crimson light in the distant galaxy. That light might be faint and rather far from them, but Su Ming could not help but think that the place was filled with an air of slaughter and bloodthirst.

Clearly, that spot where the crimson light was coming from was going through a large-scale slaughter and battle at that moment.

"There are at least one hundred thousand cultivators fighting against each other." A glint appeared in the eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor, who licked his lips.

"Crystals, darn it all, how many crystals are there?!" The bald crane's eyes sparkled.

A solemn expression appeared on Xu Hui's face. The nine old Frail Darknesses also stared at the distant galaxy with scrutinizing looks.

"With the battleships' speed, we might need about a day to reach that battlefield. Based on its position... it should be at the Relocation spot for which we are heading.

Xu Hui raised her right hand and flipped it over. The Sect Elder's plate appeared on her palm, and when she sneaked a glance at it, she shook her head. "I haven't received any warnings. This battle should have just recently broken out... But based on the location, it is indeed the place to which we are going.

"That's one of the one hundred and eight Relocation spots Morning Dao Sect has in the galaxy. When we reach it, we should be able to return to Morning Dao Sect with the Relocation power there." Xu Hui stood beside Su Ming while speaking softly.

"There aren't any other paths to enter Morning Dao Sect from the areas beyond the sect. The only way is through the one hundred and eight Relocation spots, and we need Morning Dao Sect to correspond with us to activate it. Because of that, even if outsiders took control of the Relocation spot, they won't be able to enter through it.

"It's much easier to leave Morning Dao Sect. We just need to walk to the end in any direction, and we'd be able to move through space to the galaxy of True Morning Dao World.

"The Relocation spot in front of us is the closest one, but it is also located quite near to the region which belongs to the Immortals' Union, but if we circle around this place, we'll need another month or so to enter." Xu Hui looked towards Su Ming.

True Morning Dao World was so big that even if Su Ming had lived for many years in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he was still awed. It was much larger than the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

In truth, if Su Ming was alone, he could shift and soon close the distance. However, there were hundreds of battleships with him, and because of it, his travel speed was naturally slower.

But Su Ming was not in a hurry. He wanted to see more of True Morning Dao World, and since the battle before them was clearly waged by the Immortals' Union, he nodded upon hearing Xu Hui's words. He wanted to see whether he could find any familiar faces on the battlefield.

"Let's head to the Relocation spot in front of us," Su Ming said faintly.

Chapter 1055 An Old Friend with the Family Name Bei

The sound of battle shook the entire universe. As the loud booms echoed in space, they spread outwards. Multi-colored lights from all sorts of divine abilities bloomed like fireworks, bringing about an incredibly beautiful moment that lasted for only an instant.

The bright red blood and its thick stench filled the area and stimulated all the cultivators within it.

Compared to the chaotic war between the Immortals' Union and Morning Dao Sect, the battle in this area a small-scale, with only a hundred thousand something cultivators participating.

There were about eighty thousand cultivators from the Immortals' Union, and they had launched a sudden attack against fifty thousand cultivators that were stationed to defend the Relocation spot.

Two days ago, the eighty thousand cultivators from the Immortals' Union had used some sort of unknown method to suddenly by using the Relocation Rune which was supposed to only be able to send people into Morning Dao Sect. Yet a large number of people from the Immortals' Union had arrived, catching the fifty thousand disciples from Morning Dao Sect stationed in the place unaware, and the battle had begun.

In two days, nearly twenty thousand people had died from the eighty thousand people from the Immortals' Union. Few of their corpses were complete. Most of them were torn to pieces which ended up floating around the area. Blood flowed in all directions, making the stench in the galaxy unbearable.

The price for killing twenty thousand cultivators from the Immortals' Union was twenty thousand Morning Dao Sect's disciples stationed to defend the Rune. The levels of cultivation of these cultivators from Morning Dao Sect surpassed those from the Immortals' Union, but the abrupt arrival of the enemy had injured them severely at the start of the battle, which was why they had suffered the same amount of losses.

The battle kept on going, and the slaughter continued. The cultivators on both sides fought until they were in a state of frenzy. By then, there was a huge eye floating among the army belonging to the Immortals' Union. An aloof air came from that eyeball as it watched the battle.

Beneath it were three middle-aged men surrounded by a ring of old men with powerful presences. One of them had a handsome face. Even though he appeared to be in his middle ages, there was a steadfast maturity to him. He had dashing eyebrows and sparkling eyes, and all those who saw him could imagine that he was definitely an incredibly handsome man while he was still a teenager.

He had his hands placed behind his back and was standing under the eyeball in silence. On his back was a huge bow, and he was dressed in a beautiful, noble long robe. He had an awe-inspiring face, and the presences of the other two people behind him clearly could not match up to his. They only accompanied him.

"Senior Brother Bei, it's been almost three days. With the speed Morning Dao Sect sends their messages, even if we have the method to cut off their communication channels and stall them, if we fail..." the person standing to the left of the man in the beautiful robes said in a low voice.

"That's right, Senior Brother Bei. Testing the people here for three days is already enough for us to complete our task. The fellow Daoists in other places have already returned by now. Should we... retreat?" the person to the right asked right after.

"The union sent us here to test Morning Dao Sect's reaction, and they gave us a few days. The Relocation Interception Art the Sacred Lady has come to understand can intercept the Relocation Runes for seven days, on theory. It can also cause Morning Dao Sect to suffer a seven-day delay in the battles within True Morning Dao World.

"If we leave within three days, then we won't be able to gauge the precise time," the man in the beautiful robes said calmly. His voice was low and brought with it an air of persuasion.

"This is..." The person on his left hesitated for a moment. When he looked as if he wanted to say something, a glint shone in the eyes of the man with the beautiful robes.

"The union has not sent us the call for retreat. Above us is the Eye of the Sacred Temple. Who would dare to leave on their own?! Say no more and deploy the chariots!"

When his words traveled outwards, the people by his side sighed in their hearts. They instinctively cast a glance at the gigantic eye exuding the aloof presence above him before immediately bowing their heads and voicing their obedience. They took a few steps back and sent orders to the cultivators who belonged to the union.

Booming sounds instantly echoed in the area. The space on one side of the battleship distorted before turning into a vortex, and nine gigantic crimson objects with long ferocious horns that were tens upon thousands of feet tall came out. They were chariots because of which the expressions of people from Morning Dao Sect changed at once!

Those were chariots formed from hundreds of thousands of huge swords. The crimson shade made them look as if they were dyed in blood. Harsh presence spread out from them, and they rushed swiftly into the battlefield.

The battle became even more intense. At that moment, at a spot incredibly far away from the battlefield was a region which belonged to the Immortals' Union. A gigantic planet formed by nearly one hundred planets gathered together was located there, and on it was a huge palace floating in midair.

The palace shone with a variety of colors. The land was quiet, and not a single sound could be heard. Only a woman could be found sitting cross-legged.

She was dressed in white and beautiful, but not a hint of emotion could be detected on her. She was as cold as ice, and floating before her were nine balls of light. In each of them were different pictures flashing continuously.

If anyone took a closer look, they would be able to see clearly that there were nine battlefields contained in the balls of light. In the third ball was the region where the man named Bei was located.

The woman in white stared at the balls of light calmly. Occasionally, she would fix her gaze upon one of them. Runic symbols would flash in her eyes, as if she was calculating something.

Time trickled by. As the woman occasionally paid attention to the battles in the balls of light, the third day passed for the galaxy where the man named Bei was located. The

small-scale battle had reached an incredibly devastating state there. Many of the people within the Immortals' Union had died, but the people from Morning Dao Sect had also paid a large price.

There were only about ten thousand left from the original fifty thousand. Fatigue filled their hearts, and despair enveloped their bodies. Their associates had died one by one, and the thick stench of blood around them as well as the crazed slaughter launched by the cultivators from the Immortals' Union from all directions caused them to feel as if they were about to break down from fatigue and despair.

'Why isn't the sect sending anyone to help us?!

'Usually, when we're fighting against the Immortals' Union, reinforcements arrive within a short amount of time, but three days have already passed, so why is no one here yet?!

'This is a Relocation spot, so it's an incredibly important place to Morning Dao Sect. Why... are they still not here?!

These questions were shouted loudly in the hearts of the ten thousand something cultivators from Morning Dao Sect as they continued fighting.

'What happened?!'

Behind them were nine huge platforms which formed the Relocation Rune. At that moment, there was an old man standing on one of the platforms. Beside him were three middle-aged men, and there was despair in their downcast expressions.

The old man had his eyes shut. His entire mind and soul fused into the platform under his feet, but a moment later, when he opened his eyes, his face was pale. When he lifted his head, he stared at the galaxy above him. It was the second battlefield. Over there, dozens of cultivators were fighting their way to the heavens.

Nine of the dozens of cultivators belonged to Morning Dao Sect, and they were sent from the War Chamber to defend the Rune. Fighting against them were seventeen cultivators from the Immortals' Union. They had launched a fierce battle against each other in the galaxy above and were holding each other back. They were all in Lunar Kalpa Realm, and they were the strongest cultivators in the place.

'I've already sent a message to alert the sect, but it's been three days... and there isn't any reply. Just what happened? How could this happen?!

'It's enough that they don't send any reinforcements... but why is there no reply for the message I sent back to the sect about the dangers we're facing after I activated the Relocation Rune? If no one from within the sect activates this damn Rune, no one from outside can be sent back.

'But... But these damn cultivators from the Immortals' Union used the Rune to be sent here. How... How did they do this?!' The old man's eyes were bloodshot. He was the Sect Elder stationed to defend the place with the disciples, and he was one of the Great Sect Elders in the Sect Elder Chamber, but at that moment, no matter what status he had, it was of no use.

Just now, he had tried to initiate contact with the sect again, but there was no response. Despair filled his body and soul.

If he ran, then forget whether he would be lucky enough to escape. Even if he did, he would definitely be punished according to how Morning Dao Sect dealt with deserters. Unless he switched sides and joined the Immortals' Union... But what about his kinsmen? They stayed in the galaxy under Morning Dao Sect's jurisdiction. If he fled, then his kinsmen... would face annihilation.

"Great Sect Elder, what should we do?" The three middle-aged men beside the old man looked towards him.

"I'm afraid the reinforcements from the sect won't be coming," the old man said in anguish.

The three men fell silent. The sounds of battle by their ears and the forlorn cries from their disciples before they died stabbed them in the heart.

"Great Sect Elder, perhaps we'll have reinforcements..." Suddenly, one of the three middle-aged men lifted his head.

"I remember that ten days ago, I received an order from the direction of Divine Essence Star Ocean. It told us that Dynast Dao Kong and his group were coming to this place to use the Relocation Rune to head back to Morning Dao Sect, and we were to make preparations beforehand to activate the Rune. Judging by the time, they should arrive soon!"

"Dao Kong... Forget his level of cultivation, even if he really arrives, how many followers would he be able to bring with him? It won't be enough; the blood light has grown so strong it reaches the sky. With the personalities of all direct descendants in Morning Dao Sect, he might have already turned around to head to another Relocation spot. He wouldn't come here."

"But no matter what, he is a Dynast, one of the ten Great Dynasts..."

"So what? I met him many years ago. He might seem kind, but in truth, he's incredibly cold." The group then fell silent.

"Even if we have to fight to death!" The old man laughed brokenly. He threw his head back and roared, and his shout reverberated in the battlefield to fall into the ears of all

the disciples from Morning Dao Sect in the area. "For our families, even if we have to fight to the death, do it! After we die, the sect will definitely not mistreat our families! Fight, my fellow Daoists! With our lives, fight for our families' safety! IT'S JUST DEATH, WHAT ARE YOU AFRAID OF?"

His words reverberated in space, causing all the disciples from Morning Dao Sect who heard to let out the strongest roars in their lives in the midst of their despair. Their eyes turned red, and they descended into madness.

"IT'S JUST DEATH!" the ten thousand people roared simultaneously, and their voices, louder than thunder itself, shook the entire universe.

Chapter 1056 Is This Alright?

The roars echoed in the galaxy and shook the universe.

There were still tens of thousands of cultivators left in the Immortals' Union. Behind them was the huge Eye of the Sacred Temple, and under it was the man named Bei, who was staring at the Great Sect Elder from Morning Dao Sect who'd been shouting moments ago.

'Morning Dao Sect is a sect that is destined to fall, but in truth... there are still quite a number of powerful warriors in it.' The man named Bei sighed in his heart. They had fought against Morning Dao Sect for hundreds of years, but every single time it was forced into a corner, someone like this would appear.

Even though the reason behind the words he shouted and the reason he went forward was because his family members were within the territory controlled by Morning Dao Sect and he was forced to do it for his family members' continued survival, it was still something worthy of respect.

The Immortals' Union might seem like it had great power, but in truth, no one like this had ever appeared among them.

'A pity...' The man named Bei shook his head.

"Have the chariots self-destruct. Since these people are in a frenzy, make them wake up from their madness." When the man named Bei said those words, a person behind him immediately sent the order to the soldiers.

After a moment, the nine gigantic chariots which had brought about slaughter on the battlefield collapsed with a bang. Each of them was formed by hundreds of thousands of swords. Nine chariots were equivalent to millions of swords, and all of them stirred up a gust of wind formed to shoot out in all directions with loud rumbles.

Millions of swords shooting out was a disaster to the cultivators. There were only about ten thousand disciples from Morning Dao Sect left, and at the instant the chariots collapsed, shrill roars overshadowed all sounds in the area. It was the last sound many people made.

Seven thousand people... were reduced to minced meat. With their roars, they disappeared forever from the universe. Their bodies and spirits were destroyed.

"It's just death." This sentence could be easily uttered, but there were certain words that were the same as promises. Before they were spoken, a person would be their owner, but once they were said, the speaker would become their servant.

Seven thousand people died. The remaining five thousand something disciples from Morning Dao Sect felt as if cold water had been poured over their heads, even if they had shouted those words earlier. As they shivered, they continued retreating, and signs that they were about to break down could be seen.

"Chariots... We're only people who are stationed here to defend this place. We aren't from the War Chamber, so we don't have War Weapons... They're only cultivators from all regions, yet they already possess nine Sword Chariots..." As the Great Sect Elder from the Sect Elder Chamber laughed brokenly, he watched the disorderly disciples from Morning Dao Sect. He then leaped up to turn into a long arc that charged forward.

That long arc was like a moth flying to fire. It knew that it would definitely die... but it still did it.

He did not say or utter any agitated words, and neither did he shout about his willingness to die again. All of it was no longer necessary. If there was someone fleeing, then let them, but he could not run. He was not rushing for Morning Dao Sect, and neither was he doing it for himself. Instead, he was doing it for his family members, his children, and all his relatives.

'With my death, I will be able to buy Morning Dao Sect's tolerance for my family. This... is worth it.' The old man's eyes turned bloodshot. With madness and determination, he rushed towards the camp belonging to the Immortals' Union.

"Both of you, attack. With the Moon Destroying Lightning, end his life, since he's come here to seek death. Even if your level of cultivation is not high enough compared to his, he won't dodge it," the man named Bei said while staring at the old man rushing to them from the distance like a moth flying to fire.

"We can end this battle early." The man named Bei raised his head and stared at the huge eyeball above him, and a hint of disgust appeared in his eyes.

At the instant he looked up though, an uproar suddenly rose in the battlefield. The sound came from those in Morning Dao Sect and also those from the Immortals' Union.

Along with the noise were excited cheers that spread out through the area.

"Our reinforcements have arrived!"

"It's the battleships from the sect! The people from the sect are here to save us!"

When those voices reverberating in the area, even the Great Sect Elder who was seeking death came to a halt and turned his head around to look.

He saw hundreds of battleships charging forward through the galaxy, along with near ten thousand cultivators within them. Excitement shone in his eyes, but when he looked behind them, he found that there was nothing there.

'Only this many people...'

As he filled with anguish, the uproar around him slowly died down. Despair rose in the thousands of cultivations of Morning Dao Sect again. After going through the madness just now then having it extinguished by the millions of swords before the signs of collapse showed up, excitement had been ignited again when the hundreds of battleships appeared... but when they saw that there were only hundreds of them, that excitement was mercilessly extinguished again. These kind of highs and lows took away their will to fight, whatever was left of it. The thought of fleeing and scattering... instantly formed in nearly all those cultivators.

As they dispersed, killing intent appeared in the eyes of the tens of thousands of cultivators from the Immortals' Union, and during that instant, their gazes were fixed on the hundreds of battleships.

The man named Bei shifted his gaze away from the huge eyeball above him and looked towards the hundreds of battleships in the distance.

"They aren't the reinforcements from Morning Dao Sect, or else they wouldn't have just sent these people. They should be just passing by, but since they're here, make them stay," the man named Bei said calmly.

Su Ming stood at the bow of the ship and stared at the battlefield before him. He saw the tens of thousands of cultivators from the Immortals' Union and also saw the thousands of dispersed cultivators from Morning Dao Sect, along with the numerous shredded pieces of flesh filling the galaxy along with the thick, bloody stench in the area.

"Do I have a banner?" Su Ming suddenly asked.

Xu Hui was momentarily stunned. The eyes of the oldest among the nine old Frail Darknests immediately flashed with a glint. He lifted his right hand and patted his

body. A long piece of cloth appeared in his hand, and when it drifted in space, it was revealed that it was thousands of feet long.

"Your Highness, we do not have a banner, but if you need it, I can make a simple one right now."

"I want a red one," Su Ming said faintly.

The old man immediately swung the long piece of cloth in his hand around him, to dye it red with the blood floating about. Immediately, a blood red flag took shape.

"Hang the banner and shout my name. Let all these people know who you belong to, and also let me see... whether you have the right to continue being by my side."

When Su Ming spoke, his words landed in the ears of the all the cultivators on the battleships, causing a brilliant light to shine in their eyes.

The old man hung the blood red war banner on Su Ming's battleship. With one fling, the flag which was thousands of feet long fluttered in space without any wind, and during that instant, the hundreds of battleships let out a bang. An equivalent number of light pillars then shot out from them. At the instant they charged into the battlefield, all the cultivators on the battleships took a simultaneous step forward and turned into nearly ten thousand long arcs that rushed together into the battlefield.

"DAO KONG!" those people roared at the same time at the instant they rushed out. They shouted a name, and their voices shook the galaxy. When the words tumbled outwards like thunder in all directions, it landed in the hearts of the thousands of disciples from Morning Dao Sect who had already scattered. It also landed in the ears of the cultivators from the Immortals' Union.

The voices surged about excitedly. When they fused with the momentum created by the near ten thousand people rushing out, there was only one phrase that could describe them...

As fierce as tigers and wolves!

Booming sounds shook the galaxy. The hundreds of light pillars from the battleships brought with them a destructive presence that surged into the storm in the battlefield. When it reverberated in space, the near ten thousand cultivators under Su Ming's jurisdiction closed in, and launched a crazed battle.

At the instant the near ten thousand cultivators collided against the exhausted tens of thousands who had been fighting for three days, an endless battle began!

Even though the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect were scattered, they became hesitant when they saw that scene. They did not know whether they should continue

fighting or continue fleeing, but the blood red flag and Dao Kong's name echoing in their ears caused the extinguished fighting spirit in their hearts to gradually be ignited again.

The Great Sect Elder from the Sect Elder Chamber saw the incoming cultivators and the soaring blood red war banner. He also heard the name those near ten thousand cultivators roared, and without any hesitation, he turned into a long arc that charged towards the battleship in which Su Ming stood.

At that moment, the nine old Frail Darknesses flew out together, but they did not rush into the battleship. Instead, they flew into the galaxy above them, where the dozens of powerful warriors were fighting fiercely.

The bald crane's eyes sparkled. With a single move, it disappeared without a trace. Only Su Ming could see half of an arm swiftly approaching the battlefield while traveling among the shredded pieces of flesh and torn limbs with almost no presence.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor snickered while fiercely licking his lips. Bloodthirst appeared in his eyes. He looked towards Su Ming, and when he saw him nodding, he let out a long string of laughter and decided not to spread out the full extent of his power. Instead, he only showed power that was about Lunar Kalpa Realm. He left with a single move, clearly not willing to reveal the mighty pressure which belonged to an Almighty and would cause the others to flee. Instead, he wanted to relish in the enjoyment of being a wolf in sheep's clothing.

"Is this alright?" Xu Hui chuckled softly while giving Su Ming a glance.

"We have to let them vent a little." Su Ming smiled faintly as he looked back at her.

Xu Hui and Su Ming stared into each other's eyes, and a gentleness that would not usually appear in her eyes showed up. She covered her mouth and laughed, but when she saw the huge eyeball floating in the galaxy, her mirth immediately disappeared, and her pupils constricted.

"What is that?" Su Ming's gaze also landed on the huge eyeball. He had a vague feeling that it was also staring at him at that moment.

That thing was different from Su Ming's third eye. His third eye possessed its own intelligence, but the huge eyeball gave others the feeling that it was a dead object. Clearly, it was an Enchanted Vessel that was remotely controlled by someone.

"It is the Eye of the Sacred Temple from the Immortals' Union. I am Ouyang Kong. Greetings, Your Highness!"

The person who replied to Su Ming was the Great Sect Elder from the Sect Elder Chamber rushing towards him from the distance. When he approached, he saw the dog-headed beast and Dao Fei Feng at the bow of the ship. His heart shuddered, but

he averted his gaze and wrapped his fist to bow deeply towards Su Ming while he outside the battleship.

Su Ming nodded. His gaze landed on the huge eyeball, then he shifted his gaze downwards, and saw... the man named Bei. At the instant Su Ming recognized him, a surprised glint shone in his eyes.

'Bei Ling...'

Chapter 1057 One Drop of Blood

The commander of the tens of thousands of cultivators from the Immortals' Union, the man who had already reached middle age, but who everyone could still recognize as having been handsome when he was a teenager... was Su Ming's childhood friend—Bei Ling!

When they were in Dark Mountain, he was an older brother whom Su Ming respected. Later on, they met again in the land of Berserkers, and he came to understand that all the people were fake... Now, he stood in the distant galaxy in front of him.

Su Ming stared at him, and Beiling also looked over. At the instant their gazes met through the galaxy and past tens of thousands of cultivators, Beiling felt his heart let out a thump. His expression instantly turned pale, and he took a few staggering steps backwards before the power of those belonging to the later stage of World Plane Realm erupted from his body. That power swept through the area, and only by doing so did he manage to prevent himself from being pushed back by Su Ming's gaze.

However, a line of blood trickled out of the corners of his lips. Shock appeared on his pale face. At the instant Su Ming looked towards him just then, Beiling had a strong feeling that the gaze was like a sharp sword which shot through space to pierce his eyes. When it swam through his veins, it cut his blood and flesh, sliced apart all his bones, as if everything about him had been laid bare and seen clearly.

In fact, even his soul had no room to escape under that gaze. He felt as if all of his secrets and memories were seen through, causing him to have the misconception that he was alone in a crowd.

It was especially so because Beiling felt as if that gaze contained some sort of mysterious, enchanting power. It was as if that person knew everything about his past, which made him feel an incredible familiarity, but also that he was an unfamiliar presence he had never seen before.

Beiling believed that this was definitely because the person had practiced some form of Art using the eyes. He could not manage to tell who Su Ming was. After all, at that

moment, Su Ming appeared as Dao Kong, and his level of cultivation also surpassed what the person in Beiling's memories possessed, but he did manage to tell that the one before him was definitely someone who was not ordinary.

When he recalled the name the cultivators had shouted, two words immediately rose in his heart.

"Dao Kong!"

With a calm expression, Su Ming stared at Beiling. Memories rose in his head, the final one being when he killed Beiling in the mountain which belonged to Great Leaf Immortal Sect.

However, back then, the person he had killed was Beiling's projection in the land of Berserkers, while the person standing before him at that moment was the real self.

With just one glance, Su Ming could see through Beiling's level of cultivation. He was in later stage of World Plane Realm, and just a sliver away from attaining great completion. Obtaining this level of cultivation at his age was enough to show that he was a prodigy, though compared to Su Ming, the difference between them was like the distance between heaven and earth. But there was no way Beiling could compare to the things Su Ming had experienced. To Su Ming, the trip to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence had given a metamorphosis in body and even soul, allowing him to improve by leaps and bounds.

The life-and-death situations he faced during that period was also something a normal person could not withstand.

At that moment, when he saw Beiling again, the confusion Su Ming experienced in the past was no longer something he felt. He no longer wanted to think about the truth regarding Dark Mountain either. Whether it was real or fake did not matter. As long as he knew that he was real, it was enough.

However, when Su Ming saw the bow behind Beiling's back, a complicated emotion appeared on his face. That bow existed in his memories, and it was carried by Bei Ling's father—the bow of the Head of the Guards in Dark Mountain Tribe.

However, in Su Ming's memories, that bow did not actually belong to Bei Ling's father. It belonged to Dark Mountain Tribe, and was the authentication token each Head of the Guards would inherit.

Even though this memory might be fake, Su Ming believed that it was real, and since he believed it to be real, then he would turn all of it into reality based on his memories.

"Since that's the case, leave... that bow behind," Su Ming murmured softly. He was the only one who could hear his voice. It did not matter who were beside him, be it Xu Hui or Zhu You Cai, none of them heard it.

He sighed softly, then stepped on the bow of the ship and walked into the galaxy ahead of him. When his foot landed, he had already reached the battlefield. His expression was calm, and at a moderate pace, he walked towards Beiling. The tens of thousands of cultivators before him seemed not to exist before his eyes as he continued walking in a relaxed manner.

At the moment Su Ming walked over, Beiling's pupils shrank swiftly. He took a few steps back again, and his expression kept on changing.

"Offer up the Sun Destroying Lightning. The both of you... go and gauge that person's level of cultivation!" The two people standing behind him hesitated for a moment before gritting their teeth and voicing their obedience. They immediately turned into long arcs and charged forward to attack.

Su Ming had a placid expression on his face. When he moved forward, some cultivators from the Immortals' Union in front of him charged towards him with bloodshot eyes. When he cast his gaze across the area, he found that those cultivators were packed densely together. With all sorts of divine abilities and Arts as well as light shining from their Enchanted Treasures, they charged towards him as if they were rain pouring in the galaxy.

Su Ming lifted his right hand and took a step forward. He immediately closed in on one of the cultivators. His lifted right hand casually seized the cultivator's neck, and when he dragged his arm downwards diagonally, a loud crack rang in space. The cultivator could not even dodge. His eyes instantly became dull, his neck broken by Su Ming. At the same time, red flames spread out from his hand, and he instantly reduced the cultivator's physical body to ashes.

Even the Nascent Divinity could not flee, having been instantly killed.

However, a single cultivator's death did not pose as a threat to a battlefield with tens of thousands of people. More cultivators roared and rushed towards Su Ming.

Booming sounds shook the sky and earth. Countless divine abilities landed simultaneously on Su Ming, but they could not stop him in the slightest. Those divine abilities disintegrated upon reaching him, unable to make him suffer even the tiniest bit of damage. Just his physical strength alone was enough for him to sweep through the area with brute strength.

A large amount of Enchanted Treasures charged towards him, but the instant they touched Su Ming, the sounds of metal collided with metal rang in space. The Enchanted Treasures of various appearances all shuddered and tumbled backwards

simultaneously. Their lights instantly became dull, as if the rebound from Su Ming's physical body had shaken the Vessel Spirits.

This scene shocked the incoming cultivators, and Beiling's expression changed drastically.

At that moment, Su Ming took a step forward again. When his foot landed, a loud bang rose in the galaxy. A large amount of ripples stirred up under Su Ming's feet. When they spread out, all the cultivators who came into contact with them shuddered before being instantly torn to pieces.

Su Ming's footsteps retained a fixed rhythm. It was not fast, but neither was it slow. He walked at the same pace, moving forward one step at a time. Gradually, a thick trail of blood formed behind him. The cultivators in front of him retreated, and for a time being, no one dared to block him.

Su Ming's level of cultivation far surpassed what the other cultivators in this land possessed. If it was any other powerful warrior or someone else with status standing in his place, they would find attacking to be beneath them. However, this principle did not exist for Su Ming. No matter who it was, as long as they blocked his path, they would have to suffer the fate of being destroyed.

The strong preyed on the weak. This was the law in the universe. If the powerful found it beneath them to attack when they saw the weak and would only confront those who were equal to them in power, then the universe might seem to follow a law, but to Su Ming, everything was chaos.

Or else, what sort of motivation would make someone weak do everything they could to become strong at all cost? Sometimes, relying on the strong and browbeating the weak was a desire people craved badly in the depths of their hearts, even though they did not want to say it out loud.

As Su Ming walked, the tens of thousands of cultivators from the Immortals' Union opened up a path for him. When they looked towards him, their gazes were filled with terror. The river of blood behind him was the testimony of what would happen to all those who dared to block his path.

Suddenly, two long arcs shot out from the crows. Before they closed in, they flung out four dark rays of light. At the instant they flew out, piercing screeches rang out, then turned into four dark birds that exuded the power akin to those in Solar Kalpa Realm. They charged towards Su Ming in the blink of an eye.

Sun Destroying Lightning!

This was one of the weapons which belonged to the Immortals' Union. It shared the same name as the Moon Destroying Lightning, and during the past one thousand years,

they were created by the Immortals' Union. It was rumored that only the Sacred Temple had mastered the method to create those vessels. They were so mighty that they would shine with the most dazzling light during the battles between the Immortals' Union and Morning Dao Sect.

Their name was Sun Destroying Lightning. Even though it could not really kill those in Solar Kalpa Realm, it could force down all the cultivators of that realm. In fact, if there was a sufficient number of the vessels, then it was not impossible for them to possess the power to kill them!

In truth, during the many battles between the Immortals' Union and Morning Dao Sect, the Almightyes of Solar Kalpa Realm who died due to the Sun Destroying Lightning were already in the dozens. Each time, hundreds of Sun Destroying Lightnings would rush out at the same time. The power to blast through heavens would echo in space, and it would make all who saw them to tremble. Their destructive power was enough to make all the people instantly lose their will to fight.

As Su Ming watched the four dark birds formed by the dark rays of light charge towards him as if they had locked onto him while letting out piercing screeches, he did not dodge. He simply allowed those four dark rays of light to close in on him. Under the sinister gazes from the two middle-aged cultivators who had turned into two long arcs, Su Ming raised his right hand... and grabbed one of the dark birds.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The three consecutive loud bangs instantly attracted the attention of all the cultivators who were fighting. When they looked over, their hearts trembled. Three Sun Destroying Lightnings had exploded on Su Ming, but as they collapsed, he remained as composed as ever. Not even a single strand of his hair flew up.

In his hand, the last dark bird formed by the Sun Destroying Lightning struggled ceaselessly, but it could not escape. Su Ming stood in the galaxy with his head lowered to stare at the dark bird. As his eyes sparkled, thin branches that no one could see appeared on his right hand. They shot through the dark bird and started analyzing it.

'It fused with Shamanic Spells and used the universe's laws. These are created by cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm triggering the explosion in their blood and essence. A cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm can create about one thousand of these Sun Destroying Lightnings. Perhaps... ferocious beasts akin to those in Solar Kalpa Realm could be used to create them as well.

'But the power of the blood in here is rather unfamiliar.'

Su Ming furled his right hand, and the dark bird started melting layer by layer. Under the shocked gazes of the people around him, a drop of golden liquid was revealed from the melted dark bird.

The thick stench of blood was proof which showed that it was a real drop of blood.

As Su Ming stared at it, a glint shone in his eyes. He raised the drop to his mouth and touched it gently with his tongue. A surprised sparkle appeared in his eyes.

'There's not a hint of negative presence on it, and it can even be used to nourish the soul, making a person feel as if they're under a warm sun. What creature could possess such blood? How could it have this sort of effect?'

Chapter 1058 Came from Saint Defier

Almost the moment Su Ming melted the Sun Destroying Lightning, gathered up the golden drop of blood from within and licked it with his tongue, the pupil of the huge eyeball above Beiling shrank and fixed its stare on him.

At the same time, the incredibly beautiful and aloof woman in white sitting in the large, floating palace above the gigantic cultivation planet formed by numerous planets far away from the galaxy where Su Ming was suddenly focused her eyes on him. She ignored all the scenes within the other balls of light and leveled her gaze on the third ball one. Within it was Su Ming with a look of surprise in his eyes.

She stared at Su Ming, then lifted her right hand to form a seal before swinging it to the side. Immediately, another ball of light appeared on her right hand. Within it was Su Ming's image, and it was swiftly distorting. After a moment, all the scenes in Su Ming's life immediately appeared within it, from the moment of his birth to the moment he stepped into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

Of course, what she saw was not a reflection of the real Su Ming's life, but that of Dao Kong.

"Dao Kong... one of the ten Great Dynasts. He stepped into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence around one thousand years ago," the woman mumbled softly. Her voice was like one hundred bells chiming. It was very pleasant and melodious, but the freezing tone in it would make all those who heard it to feel as if there was a cold chill creeping up their bones.

"The Barren Lands of Divine Essence..." The woman frowned. This was not the first time the mystery behind the Sun Destroying Lightning had been cracked and the golden drop of lightning in it was revealed. In truth, during the many years of war, the Sun Destroying Lightning had been destroyed many times by those in Morning Dao Sect. The golden drop of blood had been taken out and used to nourish the soul.

Because of that, the woman in white was not too shocked by Su Ming cracking the mystery behind the Sun Destroying Lightning. She was just slightly surprised that it was done by Dao Kong.

The main reason for her frowning was not related to the Sun Destroying Lightning, but because of Dao Kong's experiences in his life. She completely ignored the first half of his life, but what caught her attention the most were the last words—the Barren Lands of Divine Essence!

She stayed silent for a moment before raising her right hand and tapping the ball of light to her right. It instantly turned orange, and all of the things Dao Kong had experienced in his life were dyed orange. With that, she placed Dao Kong among people who were to be regarded with a high amount of attention in the Immortals' Union.

"Slowly but surely, I'll learn whether it's him," the woman in white said softly.

However, the moment she mumbled that, her expression changed in a manner that had never happened before. She stood up swiftly and her pupils shrank as she fixed her stare on the Su Ming in the third ball of light.

While the people had various expressions on their faces, Su Ming clenched his fist around the golden drop of blood. Thin threads appeared on his palm, and all of them crawled into the drop of blood. This was Su Ming taking a more in-depth analysis of the blood's origin using the power of the Seed of Life Extermination after he had become suspicious.

As the power of the Seed of Life Extermination from Su Ming's palm continued seeping into the golden drop of blood to swiftly analyse it, Su Ming's expression changed. He sensed a presence he could not put to words, and it was ceaselessly spreading from that golden blood. That presence seemed to have been hidden in the Seed of Life Extermination all along and had just been awakened, having experienced a powerful stimulation. At the moment it spread out, a roar that could shake the sky and earth immediately rose in Su Ming's heart.

As it echoed within him, even he was so shaken by the tremors that his mind went blank. Waves of mighty pressure descended on him, causing him to instantly feel as if he had lost all his power.

There was an ancient presence contained in that roar, along with an unfamiliar air that Su Ming had never sensed before. It was as if... it did not belong to this universe, and in fact, it felt as if it did not belong to the four Great True Worlds, much less... Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos!

Because at the moment that presence and roar echoed in Su Ming's heart, endless ripples appeared out of nowhere in the galaxy around them. It was... the law of the universe descending on them. This law had no form, and as it spread out, it caused all

the things in the galaxy to freeze. Flame Fiends' Progenitor had been having fun being a wolf in sheep's clothing as he fought in the galaxy above, but at that instant, he shuddered.

'The will of the universe! This is the law of the universe taking the form of a will to descend here. Just... what sort of reason could possibly make the will of the universe to wake up from its slumber?!'

Su Ming's heart trembled because the Seed of Life Extermination which had fused into his soul had erupted within him to fight against the presence from the golden blood, as if... the Seed of Life Extermination and the golden blood were natural archenemies. They were existences that countered each other.

Right then, the two presences were fighting against each other in Su Ming's body, and the will of the universe born from the law chose to descend on them. If... Su Ming still did not understand what was going on, then he would not have been able to survive in Divine Essence Star Ocean up till that point.

The drop of blood... came from the arch enemy of Old Man Extermination's affiliated camp—Saint Defier!

With a bang, the golden blood in Su Ming's right hand evaporated, turning into blood fog that swiftly rose into the galaxy through the cracks between his fingers. A shrill screech spilled out from the fog and caused the galaxy in all directions to shake.

The golden fog instantly gathered together to turn into a large, golden mosquito in front of Su Ming. It was hideous, but there was an incredibly pure feeling of strength exuding from its body. This power seemed to refuse to comply to the trends in the universe and be suppressed by it.

At the instant it opened its mouth to roar in Su Ming's direction, a mighty pressure instantly spread out, but its body also swiftly disintegrated like flowers that would wither after they had bloomed for one night at the moment the pressure spread out.

However, right when the golden mosquito disintegrated, a great suction force shot out from Su Ming. When the fog formed by the golden mosquito was about to scatter, that suction force swiftly absorbed all of it into Su Ming's body, fusing it into him through every part of him.

That sequence of events was witnessed by all, and it shook the hearts of the tens of thousands of people in the land.

Only Su Ming himself knew that the huge golden mosquito had disappeared because the power of origin contained in the golden blood was too little and could not fight against Seed of Life Extermination. Once it was forcefully scattered, the devouring happened.

When the fog that was formed by the golden mosquito was devoured by Su Ming, cracking sounds immediately came from his body. The Seed of Life Extermination in his soul was originally just a fragment, but at that moment, it seemed as if it had absorbed nutrients and signs of growth appeared at its edges. It might have only grown slightly larger, but it was enough to show that with more nourishment, it could complete itself!

Su Ming's eyes focused. When he raised his head, he moved forward, and he was so quick that he instantly appeared next to his target.

Beiling's expression changed. He swiftly retreated. As he did so, he lifted his left hand to seize the longbow on his back. With the momentum, he drew the bowstring with his right hand, but at the instant he did so, Su Ming stopped rushing forward. Instead, he moved left and right, and two shrill screams of pain came at the same time from the mouths of the two people who had thrown the Sun Destroying Lightnings. Their bodies crumbled with a bang, but their storage bags were caught Su Ming. He then lifted his head and looked towards Beiling.

At that moment, a glint shone in Beiling's eyes, and he let go of the bowstring in his right hand. The arrow he had placed earlier let out a buzz before it charged towards Su Ming. When it shot out, the arrow swayed in space before increasing to nearly one hundred thousand arrows. They looked like rain in the galaxy.

With a calm expression, Su Ming took a step forward and charged towards the rain of one hundred thousand arrows. As booming sounds reverberated in space, he shoved his way through. The arrows landed on his body, but all of them tumbled back with loud booms, unable to stop Su Ming for even a single moment or even injure him even in the slightest.

He took a step forward, and when his foot landed, he appeared beside Beiling. At the instant the other's face turned pale, Su Ming casually patted his left hand and snatched the bow. With a swing, a powerful force swept up Beiling and flung him tens of thousands of feet away. When he coughed up blood, his eyes turned bloodshot.

"I'll be taking this bow in exchange for your life."

"This is just an ordinary bow! What's the point of you taking it?!"

Beiling's heart ached with pain. The bow held a special meaning to him, but he could only watch helplessly as it was snatched from his hands. He might be shocked by Su Ming's power and could not accept it for a period of time, but once he finished speaking, he gritted his teeth and turned away. While he charged into the distance, he tore apart a jade slip, and his body instantly disappeared from the galaxy.

"It doesn't belong to you," Su Ming said softly. He flung the bow in his hand and put it away into the storage bag. At that instant, a powerful light suddenly shone from the

giant eyeball above him. That light turned into a long blade that came slashing down at his head.

Su Ming lifted his right hand, and the Life Inequity Spear swiftly formed in it. Once he held it, he swept towards the incoming blade. At the instant they collided with a bang, the blade shattered into pieces. At the same time, the third eye shone at the center of Su Ming's brows. It opened to a slit and stared at the huge eyeball. With it, the galaxy was magnified endlessly.

In the span of a breath, that eyeball turned into a mere illusion. When it was magnified time and again, Su Ming saw a woman in white sitting in a gigantic palace at the depths of the eyeball.

At the instant he saw the woman, her expression changed, and their gazes met.

When Su Ming her face clearly, mixed feelings rose in his heart, but not a single hint of it was shown on his face.

"Su Ming, you're Su Ming!" At the instant the woman in white met his gaze, she suddenly spoke. Her voice echoed in the palace where she was, but it also reached Su Ming's heart.

"Who is Su Ming? Could it be that he looks just like me? I am the Dynast Dao Kong from Morning Dao Sect!" A cold sneer appeared on Su Ming's lips. He lifted his right hand with mercilessness, then threw the Life Inequity Spear at the huge eyeball.

With a bang, it pierced its target. The destructive power contained in it stirred up, and spread out into the distance, even reaching the palace. It might have been blocked by the invisible barrier, but it still made the palace tremble.

"So this is the Sacred Temple of the Immortals' Union? Progenitor Huo Kui, show your power. In three breaths, slaughter all our enemies here for this disintegrating Eye of the Sacred Temple to see the sea of blood in this land!"

"I don't need three breaths!" Flame Fiends' Progenitor threw his head back and laughed while a boundless purple sea of fire spread out. In just two breaths, all the cultivators from the Immortals' Union were reduced to ashes!

The woman in white took a few steps back in the palace above the planet. She fixed her stare on the sea of fire which belonged to Flame Fiends' Progenitor in the third ball of light and on Su Ming's face.

Some sort of thought had formed in her mind, and she started mumbling under her breath. "He... No, Su Ming wouldn't be so ostentatious..."

Chapter 1059 If There was No Destruction, Then Where Would Life Come From

The Eye of the Sacred Temple shattered to pieces. The pupil in it shrank before it scattered, then dispersed along with it was the Eye of the Sacred Temple's huge body. They broke down with loud bangs.

The cultivators in the Immortals' Union were reduced to ashes in the purple sea of fire. The cultivation bases of the dozens of them fighting fiercely against those from the War Chamber were dispersed by Flame Fiends' Progenitor before they were buried in the sea of fire.

The difference in their levels of cultivation caused all of their struggles and counterattacks to be in vain.

However, while this battle might make it seem as if Morning Dao Sect was victorious, but if not counting in Su Ming and his entourage, there were only thousands of disciples from Morning Dao Sect left in the area. They were all looking at the battlefield with stupefied expressions. Gradually, they cast their gaze at Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and great shock appeared on their faces. Then, when they looked towards Su Ming, that shock turned into astonishment. No one knew who was the first to react to the situation, but someone had immediately wrapped his fist in his palm to bow deeply to Su Ming.

"Greetings, Your Highness!"

"We welcome His Highness, Dynast Dao Kong!"

The voices were scattered at first, but then they turned into a wave of sound created by thousands of people shouting together. It reverberated in the sea of fire, echoing in the galaxy and lingering for a long period of time.

In the crowd were also the cultivators in Lunar Kalpa Realm who were originally fighting against the powerful warriors in the galaxy above. Ouyang Kong of the Sect Elder Chamber was also in the distance. All of them had their fists wrapped in their palms and were bowing deeply. No matter what level of cultivation they possessed, every single one of them was incredibly shocked, and they regarded Su Ming with utmost reverence.

He stared at the distant galaxy with dark light shining in his eyes before lowering his head and raising his right hand. Immediately, two storage bags appeared on his palm. When he scanned them with his Atman, he brought out two bolts of Sun Destroying Lightning from inside.

These were the only two bolts left.

While in contemplative silence, Su Ming did not immediately absorb them, but instead placed them back in the storage bags before turning around to return to his battleship. He then set up camp right outside the Relocation spot.

After all, some problems had arisen in this area, making it difficult to activate the Relocation Rune immediately. After about three days, light spread out from it, and only then did the news of the Relocation spots being attacked was made known to Morning Dao Sect. The connection between them was only restored at that moment.

"This time, the Immortals' Union attacked nine Relocation spots. Besides our spot... Since the other eight spots could not form a connection with the galaxies beyond and could not send any messages, no reinforcements came to their aid when they were taken by surprise by the appearance of the Immortals' Union... and because of that, all of them died," Ouyang Kong said softly in front of Su Ming while on his battleship.

"Over the years, the army of the Immortals' Union had continued conquering one region after another. Wherever they go, most of the races they visit become part of the union, and most of them have the intention to devour Morning Dao Sect in one go.

"And once in a while, treasures that have never appeared before in True Morning Dao World show up in the Immortals' Union, such as the Sun Destroying Lightning. In fact, several decades have passed since then, and I'm certain that some other supreme treasure has already appeared in the Immortals' Union," Ouyang Kong said in a deep tone, sharing everything he knew with Su Ming.

"The Immortals' Union has three different forces. One of them are the Immortals, the second is Phoenix Sect..." When he said this, Ouyang Kong instinctively cast a glance at Xu Hui, who was standing next to Su Ming.

"The third is the Council of Races. This is a temporary union formed by many races. Along with the other powers, they are known as the Immortals' Union.

"Among them, the Sacred Temple is similar to the Sect Elder Chamber in Morning Dao Sect. They formulate war strategies and plan the distribution of resources, and was built by Phoenix Sect. Each battle has a different number of Eyes of the Sacred Temple, and usually, the commanders of the battles are from Phoenix Sect.

"Right now, the Sacred Lady of the Sacred Temple is the Sacred Lady from Phoenix Sect.

"The Council of Races is similar to the War Chamber. They are the ones who deploy the most soldiers in each battle.

"As for the Immortals, they are an incredibly mysterious existence in their union. They are different from the Immortals we were used to in the past. Right now, the Immortals' territory has been completely locked down. No outsider can enter it.

"But every single time, most of the powerful warriors deployed during battle come from the Immortals. They seem to have mastered another method of cultivation, and their

levels of cultivation have increased by leaps and bounds. The divine abilities they use are also rarely heard of.

"Such as... what the black-robed man the Immortals had sent three hundred years ago in a battle with more than one million people. That person was clearly not an Almighty, but he used a divine ability that turned the galaxy into a void, and the battlefield into a black hole. With blood as water, the battlefield in the galaxy was turned into a well.

"Our cultivators had the mark of a moon Branded at the center of their brows while in that well. Hundreds of thousands of people were forced to group together to form a gigantic moon. The black-robed man only gently lifted his hand after that, and as if he had scooped them out, he took away... hundreds of thousands of Nascent Divinities.

"If Progenitor Tai Shan had not rushed to the battlefield and used his great power to severely wound the black-robed man, then before the battle even started... we would have failed.

"But the price of severely wounding the black-robed man was that Progenitor Tai Shan was also heavily wounded. He had to return to Morning Dao Sect to isolate himself to recover.

"And then there was also a small-scale battle five hundred years ago. Morning Dao Sect had an extreme advantage at first, but at the instant the Immortals' Union was almost wiped out, they sent out... a creature that all of us will never forget in our lives—a giant!

"That person... was hundreds of thousands of feet tall. There were seven planets spinning in a circle at the center of his brows. With just one punch..." A wary look appeared in Ouyang Kong's eyes.

"That giant's level of cultivation was clearly only at the later stage of World Plane Realm, but the power that erupted from him was as terrifying as that of the black-robed man. They were both similarly unbelievable, and they could only be suppressed by people with levels of cultivation that surpassed theirs by more than a couple times!" Ouyang Kong's voice reverberated in space as he spoke. While listening to him, a fierce look appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

"Your Highness, you must have already guessed the answer. The strange sights over the years allowed all of us to understand clearly that... there is a power that doesn't belong to True Morning Dao World in the Immortals' Union. In fact, it doesn't belong to the forces from the four Great True Worlds. This power that descended among us gave the Immortals' Union power to fight against Morning Dao Sect.

"Otherwise, how would a mere Immortals' Union be able to remain even after one thousand years and even occupy half of the galaxy in our True World?" Ouyang Kong said bitterly.

"What about the True Progenitor?" Su Ming suddenly asked.

"The True Progenitor's status is mysterious and transforms frequently. No one knows precisely who he is, but no one similar has appeared in the war up till now. Forget you, Your Highness, even us, from all races, are also in a state of anxiety and nervousness.

"Besides, Progenitor Dao Chen is still in isolation, not having come out once. The Almightyies in Morning Dao Sect and all the powerful seniors haven't appeared either, making all of us think... that perhaps there is some other secret that we don't know of around." As Ouyang Kong spoke, he looked towards Su Ming, as if he was hoping to obtain an answer from him.

Su Ming narrowed his eyes. He remembered how the golden mosquito and the Seed of Life Extermination in his body had countered each other as if they were mortal enemies. Old Man Extermination came from Dark Dawn, then the force that countered him and was his mortal enemy was naturally... from Saint Defier!

If that was the case, then there were plenty of questions in Su Ming's heart that were answered.

The giant with the rotating planets at the center of his brows, the huge golden mosquito, and the black-robed man with the strange divine ability, along with those who had yet to appear but definitely existed... The power hidden behind all these creatures who descended in True Morning Dao World and were the reason why the Immortals' Union could wage war... came from... the 180 Expanse Cosmoses from Saint Defier!

The battle between the 180 Expanse Cosmoses from Dark Dawn and the 180 Expanse Cosmoses from Saint Defier over Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos had already reached an intense state. Saint Defier's camp had already descended, and if that was the case, then Dark Dawn's camp... might have already arrived, but no one knew about it.

How could Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos hope to fight against those two huge powers? And how could True Morning Dao World hope to stand up against them? There had to be a great connection between this and why the True Progenitor had not appeared while the Almightyies in Morning Dao Sect remained silent.

'Dark Dawn has already appeared. The ancient will from Yin Death Region and everything that happened in the fifth ocean is proof enough that this is Dark Dawn's power, isn't it?' Su Ming narrowed his eyes while thinking about it.

He closed his eyes then. He had a strong feeling that the war waged since one thousand years ago was just a start... the start for a battle that would cover the whole Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

The true battle of the Expanse Cosmos would spread out in an increasingly greater scale, and eventually, the flames of war would spread to the four Great True Worlds.

They would burn the two remaining Ancient Kingdoms, and once they burned Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, they would decide whether Arid Triad Expanse Heaven would belong to Dark Dawn or Saint Defier!

When Su Ming opened his eyes, the flames of wild ambition were hidden in them. Those flames were invisible, but they burned his body, his soul, and while they might seem naive and perhaps a little beyond his ability, they became a resolve in Su Ming's heart.

'Perhaps it will not belong to Dark Dawn or Saint Defier, but will belong to...!' Su Ming did not continue that thought, but the flames of determination in his heart had already risen to a point that they were crackling even louder than before.

"This time, the attack from the Immortals' Union caused each Relocation spot to lose its ability to send messages. If Morning Dao Sect doesn't think of a solution soon... then I am certain that multiple battles will be waged in the True World in the near future!

"Your Highness, when you return to the sect, then with your status, please relay my worries to the Sect Elder Chamber... My race is still within Morning Dao Sect's jurisdiction, and I don't want for there to be a day... when the Immortals' Union will conquer Morning Dao Sect's current territory, then offer up the blood of my people as a sacrifice." Ouyang Kong wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming, then bowed deeply to him again.

"I will do it." Su Ming's gaze landed on Ouyang Kong, then shifted to look at the galaxy. In his heart, he murmured aloof words that no one could hear.

'If there was no destruction, then from where would new life come?'

Chapter 1060 Return to the Sect

Within True Morning Dao World was Morning Dao Sect, which was situated in a spot that did not belong to the universe but had been opened up in another dimension by True Morning Dao World. There was an altar in that place. On it was a dimension that looked as if it wanted to tear through the galaxy, and within it was a world that was isolated from the universe.

In this land lived True Morning Dao World's Kalpa Lord. It was the isolation grounds which belonged to Progenitor Dao Chen. Within the indistinct light inside was a man whose back was the only thing visible. The same words as those in Su Ming's heart also came from his mouth.

"If there was no destruction, then from where would new life come?"

He did not say it because he knew what Su Ming had thought. It had absolutely nothing to do with Su Ming, but instead, it was because of a gigantic galactical map that lay before him.

That galactical map showed True Morning Dao Sect's territories. Half of them had turned crimson, and that color symbolized the Immortals' Union. In the depths of the crimson region was a pillar of light that descended from above. It stood vertically in the region which belonged to the Immortals' Union, and it was incredibly distinct.

"When Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos is destroyed, the day for my race's rise to power will arrive." Even when the person murmured those words in a deep voice, he sat still, as if his body had grown rigid.

.....

Su Ming, his group, and the hundreds of battleships slowly moved towards the Relocation Rune under the gazes of Ouyang Kong and his thousands of cultivators. Through the Rune, they could head to Morning Dao Sect.

The trip had lasted for about a month. Ever since Su Ming had stepped into True Morning Dao World, he had cut down Dao Fei Feng and also shone with a brilliant radiance through his acts while he was in the place. He killed a large number of cultivators from the Immortals' Union, and when the Relocation Rune was restored, Ouyang Kong sent word of it to Morning Dao Sect, so many people learned about it.

Dao Kong's name had faded away from many people's memories around one thousand years ago after he entered the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. But when that name resurfaced, there was a bloody stench surrounding it, along with a murderous aura that could not be ignored.

Dao Kong had killed Dao Fei Feng. This might not be the first internal fight among the direct descendants, but it was usually done in the dark. No one dared kill one of their own so blatantly, but not only did Dao Kong do it, he also hung Dao Fei Feng's corpse at the bow of his ship. The shock brought by this scene was incredibly great.

This was also an unspoken threat to all the direct descendants in Morning Dao Sect.

'Don't provoke me!'

If there was anyone who provoked or challenged him, they would end up like Dao Fei Feng.

This frightening aura filled the air, causing many people to etch the name into their minds during the past few days, even if plenty of them had never met Dao Kong and their memories of him were vague.

If he had only killed Dao Fei Feng, then only the direct descendants would have paid a lot of attention to him; he would not have been able to catch the attention of the other disciples in Morning Dao Sect. After all, to the huge Morning Dao Sect, the direct descendants were really just a small portion of their population. The disciples from the other races made up most of the sect, which was why the internal matters of the direct descendants in Morning Dao Sect were seen as having nothing to do with them.

But Su Ming's fight at the Relocation spot and his act of killing a large number of cultivators from the Immortals' Union along with him destroying one of the Eyes of the Sacred Temple caused his reputation to instantly increase by leaps and bounds, especially when most of the other direct descendants hadn't built a reputation for themselves as of then.

Su Ming's action had made many people remember Dao Kong's name.

In truth, even before he returned to Morning Dao Sect, there had already been quite a number of people who looked forward to his coming back.

The elderly with high statuses and great power in Morning Dao Sect were mostly indifferent to Dao Kong... but the information from Ouyang Kong told them that there was an Almighty by Dao Kong's side, acting as his follower.

This matter instantly stirred up a storm in Morning Dao Sect. Most people might not know about such a commotion, since it was controlled and restricted to a certain region, but it was enough for all those who knew about it to shiver.

Moreover, that Almighty was not from Morning Dao Sect. Clearly, Dao Kong had run into him in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. The fact that he could make an Almighty become his follower willingly was enough to show how fortunate and how skillful he was.

Then, when they combined all these factors along with Dao Kong's status as a Dynast, it led to a large number of cultivators gathering in a particular Relocation spot when Morning Dao Sect activated the Rune from within after they had notified all the people on the other side that Dao Kong could return.

There were some direct descendants among the cultivators, but most of them were ordinary disciples. There were also some informants sent by the old monsters who usually did not care about the matters in the universe. Then there were the people who showed incredible interest towards Dao Kong, along with some who came to see Flame Fiends' Progenitor beside him.

Regardless of purpose, there were nearly ten thousand people gathered around the Relocation spot at that moment. Their gazes were all fixed on the place shining with a dazzling light while it rotated with loud bangs while they waiting for Su Ming and his entourage to appear.

"I wonder what Dao Kong looks like. I seem to remember that I saw him before, but it's been a long time since then, and my memory of him is slightly faded."

"I still remember him, kind of. He's a direct descendant with an incredibly great potential in Morning Dao Sect. There're also people who say that he has True Morning Dao Sect's kismet on him."

"That's right. He was sent to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence around one thousand years ago, and now he killed Dao Fei Feng and massacred tens of thousands of cultivators from the Immortals' Union upon his return. It's enough to see that he had obtained plenty of experience when he was in the barren lands."

"Hmph. It doesn't matter whether he killed Dao Fei Feng in battle or slaughtered those cultivators from the Immortals' Union. Don't forget that he didn't do it on his own; it's the work of his follower!"

"That's also logical. There are people who met him on the way, and they say that he doesn't have a really high level of cultivation. He seems to only be at about the initial stage of World Plane Realm."

As the near ten thousand people waited, they discussed among themselves in whispers, which sounded like a buzz from afar.

"Interesting. This Dao Kong is the only one missing from the ten Great Dynasts right now. The others have all returned. Look around you, there are direct descendants who are on good terms with three of the Dynasts. It's clear that they are here to see whether this Dao Kong lives up to his name."

"And there are also quite a number of people from the Sect Elder Chamber as well."

There were three people of note who stood in different spots in the crowd. Many cultivators surrounded them in silence. Based on their expressions, those cultivators were clearly followers, but even so, their levels of cultivation were nothing ordinary. Even the weakest among them was in the middle stage of World Plane Realm. As for the powerful ones, there were even those who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm.

The three people appeared to be middle-aged. They had cold and aloof expressions while they stared intently at the Relocation Rune. The three of them came from three different Dynasts, and just as the other people had said, they had come to see whether Dao Kong lived up to his name.

The light from the Relocation Rune shone even brighter. Gradually, vague shadows appeared within it. They slowly gained corporeal form, and all the cultivators in the area understood what it meant—Dao Kong of the ten Great Dynasts was about to arrive.

The sounds of discussion in the area slowly calmed down. At the instant all the people's gazes were gathered on the Relocation Rune, ripples spread out from the galaxy in the distance. A long arc could be seen charging forward.

At first glance, it was in the distance, but when the group lifted their heads to look, their expressions instantly turned into one of respect. Even the three direct descendants who were on good terms with their respective Dynasts lowered their heads, wrapped their fists in their palms, and bowed.

"Greetings, Senior Tai Shan."

"Greetings, Senior Tai Shan."

The voices of nearly ten thousand people rose and fell. Above them, the long arc turned into an old man. There was a thin and frail teenager beside him. That teenager had a face as white as snow, clean and elegant. However, that teenager looked rather sickly and had her head lowered, looking like she didn't want to speak.

The teenager did not have an Adam's apple on the neck, making it clear that she was a girl, but because she was too thin and frail, her feminine features weren't very clear.

As for the old man, he had a head full of long hair. With a calm expression, he stood in midair and nodded towards the crowd before he cast his gaze on the Relocation Rune.

The people immediately started discussing among themselves quietly.

"Senior Tai Shan actually came?"

"Could this Dao Kong have some sort of connection with Senior Tai Shan? Otherwise, with his status, he wouldn't have come here."

There were some people in the crowd who had learned that Su Ming had an Almighty acting as his follower through their own methods. All of them speculated that this was the reason behind why Tai Shan had come.

Gradually, the light from the Relocation Rune grew brighter. The crowd calmed down again, and their gazes gathered on the light. A few breaths passed, and in about the time it takes for half an incense stick to burn, the light from the Relocation Rune suddenly reached a piercing degree. At the instant it became blinding to the eyes, all the cultivators in the area immediately knew... that Dao Kong had arrived!

With a bang, the tip of a battleship was the first to appear from within the Relocation Rune. As it came out slowly, the battleship was fully revealed before the crowd's eyes. It flew out, and at the instant it floated in midair, the hundreds of cultivators dressed in black armor standing on it immediately stood up and knelt down on one knee in the

direction of the Relocation Rune. They did not speak a word, but the grim presence from their bodies instantly filled the whole area.

That grim presence was naturally formed after those cultivators had went through the trials in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

They were in the first battleship, and the instant it showed up, some of the cultivators in the area focused their gazes on it and scrutinized it.

But there were still many people who had indifferent expressions on their faces, not at all shocked by the grim presence. After all, there were plenty of people who had killed to a monstrous degree during the past one thousand years of war between Morning Dao Sect and the Immortals' Union.

Boom!

The second battleship appeared from within the Relocation Rune. Then came the third, the fourth... and hundreds of battleships came out, filling up up the area. The near ten thousand cultivators on them knelt in worship. Their expressions were filled with fervent zeal, and a thick, grim presence came from their bodies.

This scene affected the onlookers' emotions. Gradually, their emotions were stirred up, causing different lights to appear in their eyes. At that moment, a shocking boom reverberated in the air, and the bow of a gigantic battleship came from within the Relocation Rune.

At the instant the crowd's gazes landed on its bow, the sound of sharp intake of breath instantly rolled through the crowd, because everyone saw Dao Fei Feng's corpse, and behind him the dog-headed beast's carcass!

There were times when knowing about something was a different matter from seeing it with one's own eyes. At that moment, it was the case for the cultivators in the area. They could sense an arrogance from that ship with the two dead bodies hung at its bow for all to see.

They also sensed a threat aimed against all those who were hostile towards the owner of the ship. A powerful killing intent was contained in that very blatant threat.

Chapter 1061 My Old Friend Huo Kui

As more parts of the gigantic battleship slowly showed up from the Relocation Rune along with Su Ming, who was dressed in the Sacred Constellation Robe and had his long hair fluttering in the air while his hands were placed behind his back as he stood at

the bow of the ship, all the people's gazes were trained on him at the instant he appeared!

"Your Highness, we welcome you back to our sect!" At that moment, the cultivators dressed in black armor who belonged to Su Ming and were around him spoke at once, their voices shaking the sky and earth and all the people around them!

The blue sky was filled with white clouds, causing the sky to look as if it was filled with a peacefulness. When anyone looked into the distance, they would find that the land was boundless. It... was Morning Dao Sect.

There were no galaxies in this place, only sky and earth. However, they were so vast that even with Su Ming's Atman, he could not completely cover them.

There were ninety-nine mountains that towered into the clouds in the vast land. They stood tall and exuded waves of mighty pressure that made it seem as if they were defending the land, making all those who saw it to be unable to disagree with how huge the place was.

Above the ninety-nine mountains were nine continents that formed the shape of a circle floating in the sky. They existed far in the distance. If anyone looked over, they could only see a circular mark, unable to see the continents unless they scaled the sky. Otherwise, it would be difficult for them to see the full thing.

There also seemed to be other continents above the nine continents, but they were too far away and could not be identified clearly.

If that was the case, then even though Morning Dao Sect was huge, it did not really fit the image of being the strongest sect in True Morning Dao World. It might be big, but it was still not enough.

However, the memories which belonged to Dao Kong in Su Ming's head allowed him to understand that the seemingly boundless continent upon which he currently stood was in truth floating in midair, and there were nine hundred and ninety-nine such continents in Morning Dao Sect.

They were all floating in midair, forming a gigantic ring, and beneath them... were Nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine continents to form an even bigger one. They were... all floating in the sky.

At the bottommost part was an ocean. It was a mysterious area known as the Dao Ocean. It was a forbidden region, but there was no need to intentionally label that place as such. It was known like that just to warn all the disciples from Morning Dao Sect who wanted to go to the Dao Ocean that it was very dangerous.

In truth, over the course of countless years, no one had ever returned once they stepped into Dao Ocean. All of them died. It was a forbidden region for the living.

There were rumors in True Morning Dao World that it was in truth formed by Dao Ocean, that the first Dao Chen was just a clone of it.

However, rumors were only rumors. No one knew whether it was real. Perhaps only every single Dao Chen who was ever born would know whether the rumor was true or not.

Su Ming averted his eyes from the sky. Once he swept his gaze past the area and the battleship under his feet gradually gained more complete form, he saw the near ten thousand cultivators looking towards him at that moment.

He swept his gaze past them, and all those who met his gaze would find their hearts trembling. They had a strong feeling that Su Ming's eyes had turned into sharp arrows that pierced their hearts when he looked at them, causing their cultivation bases to become chaotic and loud bangs to ring within them.

At that instant, the people moved back simultaneously. Those with higher levels of cultivation were in a better state and it was just their hearts that trembled, but those who had lower levels of cultivation heard a ringing in their head. Their minds went blank, and a great desire to worship Su Ming rose within them. They felt that if they did not worship him once they met his gaze, their hearts would be torn to pieces while they broke down.

With the loud bangs in their heads, the cultivators were forced back, then wrapped their fists in their palms to bow together towards Su Ming.

"Your Highness, welcome back to the sect!"

The voices rose and fell before gradually turning into a wave of sound that rumbled through the area. In the crowd, the three middle-aged men who represented the three Dynasts stood with pale faces. When they moved back, their eyes were filled with great shock.

When the battleships all passed through the Relocation Rune and the light from it disappeared, the nine old Frail Darknesses, Xu Hui, Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and Zhu You Cai also showed up. By Su Ming's side was the Abyss Dragon, who had been released and had turned into a big yellow dog at that moment, and along with it was the bald crane. They appeared as the Dual Fiends at that moment.

Next was the catwoman. Too much of her blood and essence had been absorbed by the boy with the blood of Ancient Wu, so she had recovered only a little with much difficulty, but had been released before Su Ming stepped into the Relocation Rune. At that moment, she stood by his side. Her face was slightly pale, but when she looked towards Su Ming, her gaze was much different from before.

The appearance of the entire group, the hundreds of battleships in the sky, and the mighty pressure formed by Su Ming's gaze fused together to create an incredibly powerful, intimidating force.

Su Ming's expression was calm. When he swept his gaze past the land, he cast his eyes on the three direct descendants. They had many followers and guards where they stood, which was why they were incredibly distinct in the crowd.

"I need a follower. It doesn't matter whether you are a direct descendant or whether you are from another race, I need someone who is incredibly familiar with Morning Dao Sect so that I can fill in the gaps regarding things I missed over the thousand something years I was gone.

"All of you have come to welcome my return, so is there anyone among you who is willing to take up this position?" Su Ming asked faintly. His voice was not loud, but it managed to reach every single person's heart.

The ten thousand people immediately fell silent. There were quite a number of them who were hesitant. They felt that it was a great chance, but Su Ming had just arrived. He might have a great presence that seemed like a tidal wave, but no matter what, the other nine Dynasts were also prodigies. There would surely be a devastating competition between all ten of them in the future. Because of that, the result of going into it without careful consideration would be eternal damnation if something went wrong.

Which was why the hesitating people found it hard to make a decision.

"I knew it was you, you old flame monster!"

A cold harrumph came from Progenitor Tai Shan, who was not too far away in the distance. Those words and the cold harrumph immediately caused the hesitant people to lose all thoughts of joining Su Ming. All of them noticed that something was off.

The white-haired Tai Shan cast his gaze on Flame Fiends' Progenitor, who was behind Su Ming. Even though Flame Fiends' Progenitor had a hood over his head, he was still an Almighty. Huo Kui could deceive all the other people in the area, but he could not lie to Progenitor Tai Shan, who knew of some of the things that had happened outside.

"Heh heh, I knew I'd run into you here, you old coot. Tai Shan, Tai Shan, why don't you just lift a mountain and have it crush you to death?" Flame Fiends' Progenitor chuckled in a low voice. When he raised his head, he pulled off the hood to reveal his hideous face, and he directed his red eyes towards Progenitor Tai Shan.

"If you aren't burned to death, then how will I be crushed by a mountain?"

Progenitor Tai Shan snorted coldly again. When he took a step forward, he charged towards Su Ming's battleship. His arrival immediately caused the cultivators in the area to focus on him, especially the three middle-aged men who represented their Dynasts in checking whether Su Ming was truly as the rumors said. At that moment, delight appeared in their eyes.

The expressions of the nine old Frail Darknesses changed while they stood beside Su Ming. Even Xu Hui's pupils shrank. The bald crane and the dog who was the Abyss Dragon were unaffected. They moved their heads side to side, occasionally staring at the area with brilliantly sparkling eyes while gulping.

Zhu You Cai had his eyes shut, completely ignoring everything around him. However, his gigantic stature had naturally been noticed by the others a long time ago.

Su Ming's expression remained as calm as ever. He watched Progenitor Tai Shan approach them and listened to the echo of the words, suddenly reminded of the first time he had met Huo Kui and Zhu You Cai. Huo Kui had similarly used such biting words on Zhu You Cai, but in truth... their relationship had been pretty good.

At the instant Progenitor Tai Shan turned into a long arc and closed in on them, Flame Fiends' Progenitor let out a long howl and rushed out to charge towards him as well. The two of them closed in on each other in midair, and their palms struck each other with a loud bang. They were forced back, and while Flame Fiends' Progenitor moved back eight steps, Progenitor Tai Shan only took four steps back.

"You did this on your own accord?" Progenitor suddenly asked.

Su Ming had a calm expression on his face. He could tell with just one glance that Progenitor Tai Shan's strike had not been an attack, but was aimed to test whether there was some sort of seal in the body of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Similarly, the palm strike from Flame Fiends' Progenitor might have looked like he had attacked, but in truth, it was used to hide the divine thought he sent to Tai Shan at the moment they clashed.

"Rubbish, if I was unwilling, who could make me leave my nest?" Flame Fiends' Progenitor grinned.

A smile also gradually appeared on Tai Shan's face. His gaze fell on Su Ming, and after a moment of scrutiny, he narrowed his eyes before wrapping his fist in his palm towards Su Ming.

"I am Tai Shan. Greetings, Your Highness. This old flame monster and I are acquainted, and I owe him my life. If he had not lent me a hand when we were in the fifth kiln within Divine Essence Star Ocean, I would have died.

"I attacked him just now to test him. I hope that you will not mind. As for the follower you will need, there is no need for you to search for any other outsider. I have a disciple with me who is completely up to the task.

"Fei Er, come here quick and greet His Highness." Smiling, Progenitor Tai Shan called out to the thin and frail teenager who had her head lowered in the distance. When he looked towards the girl, there was only loving affection in his eyes.

The teenager was of course a girl. She moved over with great reluctance and stood beside the old man. Once she cast a glance at Su Ming, she spoke in a lackadaisical manner. "I am Ma Fei. Greetings, Your Highness."

"Oh, this child..." Progenitor Tai Shan glared at the girl. When he turned his head back to look at Su Ming, he spoke with a smile. "She is my only disciple. She's had a weak constitution since she was young, but she is very intelligent. There is nothing that she does not know of in Morning Dao Sect. If you have anything that you do not understand, you can ask. If she misbehaves, you can discipline her as you please.

"I will hand this foolish disciple of mine to you. Please teach her well so that she will gain more experiences in her life." Progenitor Tai Shan's expression became serious. He wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming, then bowed deeply.

Su Ming cast Tai Shan a glance. He might not know what sort of message Huo Kui had delivered to him, but clearly, that message had caused the old man to push his disciple on him, and there were plenty of underlying meanings with that 'outsider' he mentioned just then. If Su Ming still did not understand what he meant, he wouldn't be Su Ming.

He smiled faintly, willing to accept this gestures of goodwill. He swept his gaze past the thin and frail girl, but just as he was about to speak, he suddenly turned his head around and cast a glance at the distant sky.

"Dao Kong, you killed my older brother! Now, do you dare step up to fight against me by yourself?!" An enraged roar came from the distance. Along with it, a sword sliced through the air towards the battleships.

1. Tai Shan, Tai Shan, why don't you just lift a mountain and have it crush you to death: It's a play of words, Tai Shan (台 tai2 山 shan1) means 'to lift mountains', so Huo Kui is basically saying he should literally lift a mountain.

**Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1062 Ignore - Read Pursuit
of the Truth Chapter 1062 Ignore
Chapter 1062 Ignore**

The sword shone with a green light. As it charged forward, it instantly closed in on the area. Without a hint of intending to stop, it rushed towards Su Ming, and it was so quick that it looked as if it was about to slice through space itself to appear in front of him.

There was no one on that green flying sword, but it looked as if it was held by someone. It rushed to the center of Su Ming's brows with incredible agility.

Killing intent instantly erupted from it and turned into an endless chill that filled the area. Waves of green aura also spread out from the flying sword. It smelled sweet, but once someone breathed it in, it would turn into a strange bitterness that would leave a taste on the tongue.

"Dao Fei Xian!"

"It's Dao Fei Xian's Will of the Sword!"

Cries of surprise from the crowd immediately rose into the air. Su Ming's expression was calm as he watched the incoming green flying sword. He did not make any move to dodge, but instead turned his head around to look towards the thin girl to continue with what he had wanted to say.

"Then over the next few days, I will need you to introduce Morning Dao Sect to me in detail, Miss Ma Fei."

The moment Su Ming said those words, a cold glare shone in the eyes of Progenitor Tai Shan, stood beside them. He let out a cold snort, then raised his right arm and swung it. Immediately, an invisible gust of wind swept up the incoming flying sword, which made it shudder and instantly fall back.

"I am meeting up with an old friend here! Who dares to interrupt me!"

That was Tai Shan not being ruthless. Otherwise, it would have been far too easy for him to just break the sword and injure the owner's soul.

Su Ming might not have paid any attention to the incoming sword, but he did take note of the attack Progenitor Tai Shan performed while he swung his arm.

'Almost into Fate Realm, and can even control a bit of the fate around him. This Tai Shan has extraordinary power... He was injured badly when he fought against the black-robed man in the past. Based on this and Ouyang Kong's words,... he should have been slightly weaker than what he is now when he fought against the black-robed man in the battlefield.'

'Black robes...'

When Su Ming heard about a black-robed man appearing in the battlefield from Ouyang Kong, he had already linked some things in his mind. There might be a number of cultivators in the universe who liked wearing black, but in Su Ming's memories, the person who left the deepest impression in him was still the black-robed man who had fought against his elder when he was in Dark Mountain!

There had also been words about some mysterious organization about which the black-robed man spoke at the time. There was a meaning contained in those words-that his elder was once a member of that organization.

It had been many years since then, but Su Ming had subconsciously thought of that black-robed man.

As Progenitor Tai Shan flung off the green sword and it tumbled as it fell back, the space beside the sword in the sky distorted, and a young man in green robes appeared. His face was filled with pimples, and he looked incredibly hideous. Once he appeared, he seized the flying sword and glared at Su Ming.

"Senior Tai Shan, I once heard that you ran into a black-robed man a battle?" Su Ming suddenly asked while looking at Progenitor Tai Shan.

When the old man heard it, his expression instantly turned serious and he nodded.

"Did he die?" Su Ming stared at Progenitor Tai Shan while speaking in a languid manner.

Progenitor Tai Shan remained silent for a moment, then a look of reminiscence appeared in his eyes. "Since I'm still around, the black-robed man is naturally around as well. His cultivation method is incredibly strange. He is clearly just in Lunar Kalpa Realm, but the power he showed... was the power of the laws of fate!

"I still can't forget his divine ability. He could turn the universe into ground, space into the bottom of a well, and make the round sky and the square earth to be like a huge well. Tens of thousands of cultivators were pulled together to form moons, and he extracted their souls as if he was taking out a moon from the well, but even I could feel that the Art was not complete. It seems that due to his level of cultivation, he still can't fully bring out its power."

The two of them continued talking to each other, ignoring the man in green in midair. The hate in his eyes grew stronger, for he could sense it clearly that Su Ming was completely unbothered by his presence. This sort of disregard caused the killing intent in his eyes to grow stronger and stronger.

"Dao Kong, are you only capable of being protected by the others beside you?! Can't you be like a man and fight against me?!" The man in green's voice was piercing to the ears as it spread in all directions.

"Do you dare fight against me?!" The resentment in the man in green's eyes kept growing stronger while his shouts echoed in the area.

Su Ming's expression remained the same. He was pondering over Tai Shan's previous words. After some time, he nodded.

"Your Highness, please allow my foolish disciple to bring you to the Sect Elder Chamber to meet the three Sect Masters. All ten Great Dynasts have arrived, and over the course of the next few days, the grand ceremony will surely be held." Tai Shan smiled. When he spoke to Su Ming, he cast a glance at Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

"I'll have to ask you to be more tolerant and patient with Huo Kui. This old monster is the hot-tempered sort and has never been restricted in the way he does things. While he was able to survive in Divine Essence Star Ocean with this sort of personality, in the four Great True Worlds, it is slightly inappropriate."

Flame Fiends' Progenitor glared at him. He let out a snort, but said nothing. During the past few days, he could already see that the tides were changing in the four Great True Worlds, but in his eyes, as long as he followed Su Ming, nothing would be a problem for long.

"Alright. Huo Kui, since you ran into an old friend, there's no need for you to follow me for a time." Su Ming nodded. He then cast Flame Fiends' Progenitor a glance, and the other grinned.

"Old Tai Shan, you said you still have a lot of that alcohol you kept in your pockets in your cave abode. Let's go, let's go! I want to see it!"

Tai Shan's expression turned dark before he shook his head and turned into a long arc to leave into the distance. Flame Fiends' Progenitor laughed and left with him to disappear into the horizon in the distance.

"Fei Er, do not continue misbehaving beside His Highness. I handed you over to His Highness for him to take care of you and teach you."

Progenitor Tai Shan's voice echoed in the thin girl's ears, but the words had the opposite of the desired effect. Her expression became one of discontent, clearly refusing to accept his decision. While standing on Su Ming's battleship, she cast a sideways glance at him. There was slight scorn in her heart, but she did not show it on her face, deciding to put on an expressionless mask.

"The Sect Elder Chamber is not in the Dao Fragment here. It's on the first continent in the upper world. Battleships cannot enter that place. Once you help your followers settle down, I will bring you there, Your Highness.

"Besides, even if you have not returned for many years, surely you haven't forgotten where the Sect Elder Chamber is and where you live, right?" the thin girl said flatly.

Su Ming did not speak. The battleship beneath him moved forward and immediately turned into a long arc that charged into the distant sky. The hundreds of battleships beside it followed with a vast and powerful presence that charged through the land with a loud howl.

Next to Su Ming, Xu Hui smiled and stared at Ma Fei before saying softly, "You sure have a biting tongue, lassy. I had several maid servants like you in the past, and since they spoke too much, I sealed their mouths shut so that they couldn't speak again in their lives."

"You're right, old senior, this young junior of yours understands now." The thin girl cast a glance at Xu Hui.

"Concealed taunts, hmm? That's even worse. I wonder if you've heard of a legend. In it, there was a girl who was disobedient, and on the second day, she turned into a man. She continued being disobedient, so she was transformed back into a woman, but during the transformation, for some unknown reason, perhaps some parts were overlooked, so she turned into someone who is neither a man nor a woman," Xu Hui said with a smile.

When Su Ming heard it, he quickly looked away as if he was deep in thought and was not listening to anyone's words.

Ma Fei stared at Xu Hui, and after a long while, she suddenly exclaimed, "You're the Scorpion Lady Xu Hui!"

"Hmm? You've heard of my name as well? But calling me in such a straightforward manner? How very rude. There is also a legend about children who have no manners. I wonder if you've heard about it before..."

Su Ming instinctively took a few steps forward to ignore Xu Hui's soft-spoken words behind him.

"Dao Kong! You've gone too far!"

A furious roar came from behind, and a green long arc charged towards the battleship at an incredibly quick speed.

Within it was the man in green from before. He felt that Su Ming was humiliating him. The scene before made him feel as if everyone had been treating him as if he was air, as if he did not exist. Every time he spoke, he felt like he was just talking to himself, and this form of disregard was something that he could not accept.

He might not be a Dynast, but he still had quite a high reputation among the direct descendants. That reputation had been built and spread due to his brutal methods and all the people he had killed. In fact, his level of cultivation was also slightly higher than that of his older brother, Dao Fei Feng.

However, his furious roar still did not stir up any form of interest within Su Ming. His battleship still moved forward, and the speed of the young man's flying sword could not catch up to that of the battleship. When some distance had been widened between them, the man in green roared at the sky.

"Dao Kong, you-"

The young man in green gritted his teeth and lifted his right hand. A medicinal core immediately appeared on his palm. When he swallowed it, he struck the center of his brows with his right hand. With it, his whole body immediately turned crimson. Killing intent shone in his eyes, and he moved forward. His speed instantly increased by several fold, and with a loud whistle, he charged towards Su Ming's battleship. In the blink of an eye, he caught up to it. The flying sword shone in his hands and cut down on his target.

Su Ming's expression remained the same. The moment the young man in green came to him, he turned around and cast a cold glance at him. He took a step forward, and his body instantly disappeared. When he reappeared, he had already come into contact with the flying sword in the young man's hand. With two fingers, he caught it, which resulted in a loud bang. No matter how the flying sword struggled, it could not escape Su Ming's hold.

At the same time, Su Ming took a step forward. He appeared right beside the young man in green. At the instant his eyes went wide, Su Ming lifted his left hand, and without any difficulty, went to seize the young man's throat.

The young man's expression changed drastically. The Constellation Robe on his body swelled up. Cracking sounds echoed in the air, and several jade amulets shattered, turning into a screen of light around him, but at the instant the screen of light crashed against Su Ming's left hand, it shattered. Shattering along with it was the green Constellation Robe that the young man wore.

Su Ming seized the young man's throat with his left hand without any form of resistance in his way. Once he lifted the youth up, he locked his fingers around his neck, and a destructive force rushed into the young man's body, instantly destroying all of the venous pathways within him.

All of this happened in the span of a few breaths, and it was so fast that before the near ten thousand cultivators in the area could react, it was already over. It was so quick that even the thin girl sucked in a sharp breath of air, her eyes going wide.

"I'll give you the span of three breaths to tell me who sent you here," Su Ming said flatly while he stared into the young man's eyes, which were now filled with shock, terror, and disbelief.

1. Rounded sky and square earth: Is a concept in traditional Chinese geography, and it was quite prevalent in Chinese architecture.

Chapter 1063 Nine Striking Lands

"You... You..." The disbelief in the eyes of the young man in green grew even stronger. Never in his dreams would he have thought that within just a few breaths, he would not have even a hint of power to fight back, that Dao Kong would be able to decide whether he would live or die.

In fact, the mighty pressure exuding from Su Ming's body right then might not have been spreading through the area, but it was enough to make the young man in green feel a great, suffocating pressure.

And while Su Ming's words were spoken in a calm manner, the murderous intent in his voice was cold and brought with it a hint of bloodthirst. All of these caused a loud bang to rang out in the young man's mind. He instantly turned pale and realized how ludicrous he had been just then. He was like a little lamb challenging a huge dragon, and he even really thought that he was stronger than the dragon.

After all... he had not paid any attention to Dao Fei Feng at the start. He had only caught up to his own death after he swallowed the secret pill and stimulated his speed.

"I..." The young man in green shuddered. When he was about to continue speaking...

"It's a pity, but time's up." Su Ming shook his head. He released his grip on the young man's neck. The instant the young man in green breathed in a mouthful of air, Su Ming's two fingers slice across his neck at lightning speed as he spun on his feet.

The green flying sword Su Ming held between his fingers sliced across the young man's throat in an instant. Fresh blood gushed upwards, sending a head flying into the air. When it spun in the air, disbelief could be seen still lingering in the young man's eyes.

Su Ming's expression remained the same. He squeezed the two fingers of his right hand together, and with a crack, the green flying sword shattered to pieces. When they fell to the ground, Su Ming turned his head to cast a glance at the sky to his right before averting his gaze and taking a step forward to return to his battleship.

It was as if nothing had happened, as if the corpse that plunged to the ground and the pieces of a flying sword were just an illusion. Su Ming stood on the ship indifferently as it left into the distance.

What remained were the near ten thousand cultivators in the land who stared after him with shocked gazes, surrounded by seemingly dead silence.

When the hundreds of battleships belonging to Su Ming disappeared into the distance, an uproar immediately rose in the land. The buzz of discussion rose and fell, and the right side of the sky in which Su Ming had sneaked a glance before he left distorted. Three people walked out from it.

One of them was middle-aged man. He was dressed in a blue robe, and he wore a coronet on his head. There was an awe-inspiring expression on his face, and he looked imposing, which gave him an invisible presence as he stood in the air.

The two people beside him were old men. At that moment, they were staring in the direction Su Ming had left with sullen and dark expressions on their faces.

"Very powerful. Those rumors were no exaggerations. Forget just one Dao Fei Feng. Even if there were ten or a hundred of them, they wouldn't be his opponent."

"The Sect Elder Chamber is also keeping quiet about this. It's a telling sign about Dao Kong's level of cultivation and his influence."

"Your Highness, you shouldn't have sent someone to test him just now... Before he left, it's clear that he discovered us."

The two old men behind the middle-aged man spoke in low voices.

The middle-aged man stared in the direction in the sky in which Su Ming had left. After remaining silent for a moment, he asked in languid manner, "How confident are you in killing this person?"

"Without that Almighty by his side, without Xu Hui in the way, without the nine old Frail Darknesses forming the Rune, we would need to borrow a Sealing Treasure and have three other people in Solar Kalpa Realm before we could kill him. We can only kill him with five people," one of the two old men said after being quiet for a moment.

"How great are the chances of success?" The middle-aged man frowned.

"Nine-tenths," the other old man replied calmly. There was a hint of pride on his face.

"Nine-tenth is still too little. If I try to kill him, no accidents can occur. If he doesn't die and tries to take revenge, it'll be very troublesome. Is there a way for us to be absolutely in being able to kill him?" the middle-aged man asked while shaking his head.

"There is. We have to ask for help from an Almighty. Even if it's an Almighty who has just become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, we can easily and certainly kill this person, but the condition is that his Almighty follower is not beside him," the old man on the left answered in a ghastly fashion.

"Let's observe how threatening this person is later. If there is a need, then while asking for an Almighty who has become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death for many years will be slightly bothersome, I know one senior among us who has who would fit the description."

The middle-aged man smiled faintly. It sounded as if he could decide Su Ming's fate, but first wanted to determine whether Su Ming's actions would pose a threat to him. Once he proved to be in the way, he would end Su Ming' life.

He felt that he had that within his grasp.

'So what if you have an Almighty as your follower? Dao Kong, your foundation isn't solid enough. Your ancestor is no longer the Sect-Master-in-charge. He has already gone back to isolation. No one knows how long it will be until the next time he wakes up again. Without a foundation and a pillar of support, what right do you have to be a Dynast who can stand on equal grounds with us?!

The middle-aged man laughed coldly. He turned around and moved to disappear into the air. He had his own reasons as to why he had sent someone to provoke Su Ming, even though the two old men had said that he should not do so.

'I intentionally used someone as stupid as Dao Fei Feng. If he could humiliate Dao Kong with his power and status, it would have been a successful test. If he couldn't and got heavily injured, it'd let the other Dynasts know about Dao Kong's level of cultivation.

'Now that one of them died, it's even better. The competitors who are on equal footing with me will pay attention to Dao Kong. With that being the case... everyone's attention will move away from me, and I'll be able to relax a little.'

As the middle-aged man left and the near ten thousand cultivators in the land dispersed, the event of Su Ming killing Dao Fei Feng immediately spread out, courtesy to the cultivators who sent word to the others via letters.

Su Ming stood on his battleship. He remained composed all along the way as he observed the mountains and rivers in the land as well as the sky and earth, but he did not pay any attention to the thin Ma Fei who was observing him with a strange gaze at that moment.

The mountains, rivers, and the land he saw slowly fused together with the memories of Dao Kong in Su Ming's mind, causing him to subconsciously become much more

familiar with the land. Several hours later, Su Ming and the hundreds of battleships arrived at another Relocation Rune under the ground at the center of the continent.

This Relocation Rune was not connected to the world outside. Instead, it was used to connect the continents on the same plane within Morning Dao Sect. Several moments later, the Relocation Rune on the sixty-third continent among the ninety-nine continents shone, and Su Ming and his entourage walked out from it.

The sky in the place they entered was an azure blue. The land was vast, and there was a huge ocean in the distance. This scene was incredibly clear in Dao Kong's memories, for it was his homeland. It was also the place where he and his followers had grown up.

When Su Ming and his entourage appeared, a wave of sound formed by the fusion of multiple voices immediately rang out in all directions.

"Greetings, Your Highness! Welcome back!"

The voices were loud and belonged to hundreds of thousands of people speaking at the same time. There were nearly five hundred thousand cultivators beyond the Rune, and they were packed so closely to each other that it seemed as if there was no end to them. All of them were kneeling on the ground with excitement on their faces as they greeted their lord.

Dao Kong was the master of the continent. He was the master in the past, and now, after he became a Dynast, he was fully deserving of the title.

Among the crowd were hundreds of direct descendants of Morning Dao Sect. All of them belonged to Dao Kong's branch of the family. They stared at Dao Kong in excitement, believing that if he could seize the title of Dynast tightly in his hand, then their branch of the family would be able to rise to power in Morning Dao Sect.

Su Ming cast his gaze on the people closest to him, and he found that he could remember all the names of those who belonged to his family in Morning Dao Sect within this land. When he stared into the distance, Su Ming saw the lineup of five hundred thousand cultivators, and he was shocked once more by Morning Dao Sect's size.

It was just one of the ninety-nine continents. If anyone made some calculations, they would know that the continents would amount to the vast power of fifty million cultivators, and that was not accounting the people of the 999 continents beneath them. Living there were direct descendants who were slightly weaker than them along with the branch families as well as a great number of people from other races.

If Su Ming had to count them, he'd find it difficult to estimate just how great was Morning Dao Sect's power.

'Morning Dao Sect did not deploy all of their forces in this war. Why not? Could it be that they're waiting for something, or perhaps... are they using this war... to train their disciples?' A barely noticeable glint shone in Su Ming's eyes.

As the hundreds of thousands of people welcomed him, the battleships landed on the ground. When they descended, the ground trembled, and the cultivators in the ships flew out. This was their homeland. They had left with Dao Kong to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and they had not come back for around a thousand years. When they returned at that moment, slight excitement appeared on their faces.

"Let's go to the Sect Elder Chamber."

Su Ming swept his gaze across the area before rising into the air to charge into the sky. Xu Hui and the others were not direct descendant so they did not have any plates which would give them the right to go to the Sect Elder Chamber. However, the thin Ma Fei had such a plate. She sized up Su Ming, but did not ask him anything on the way. As they flew up, they reached the highest level of the continent, and an invisible barrier appeared to stop them.

A gentle mighty pressure spread out from the barrier, but even though it was gentle, Su Ming's pupils still constricted at the instant he sensed it. The mighty pressure was equivalent to the power of an Almighty in Fate Realm, and an ordinary person would definitely not be able to get through it easily.

Judging by its looks, it covered the entire boundless sky over the ninety-nine continents.

Su Ming remained composed. When the Constellation Robe on his body touched the gentle power, the light from the constellations on the robe immediately neutralized it, making the barrier to disappear. The thin girl by his side brought out a blue plate. It shone, and the blue light spreading out from it covered her, allowing her to move through the barrier as well.

Su Ming continued rising. At the instant he passed the invisible barrier, he saw a white sky. All of it was in that single color. When he cast his gaze across it, he found nine continents. All of them were incredibly large, and they formed a gigantic ring in the sky.

At the center of each continent was a circulating five-colored light. Each of them formed a gigantic pillar that charged into the white sky above it, and quite a large number of dragon-shaped creatures could be seen swimming about them and the continents.

"Nine continents, nine pillars of light. These are the Nine Striking Lands of Morning Dao Sect. There are nine different trials of different levels among them, and each disciple who can clear the trials will be able to obtain an incredibly great reward," Ma Fei said softly.

Chapter 1064 Hostility

"Striking Lands..." Su Ming's gaze landed on the nine pillars of light formed by the five-colored circulating lights. Once he swept his gaze past every one of them, the sight gradually overlapped with Dao Kong's memories in his head.

With his level of cultivation, Dao Kong could only head to the first of the Nine Striking Lands, Rockslide Wastelands, and only managed to clear up to the sixth stage. As for the seventh stage, he had no hope with the strength he possessed at that time.

However, just by clearing six stages had allowed him to obtain a Serendipity Core. It was precisely it that had allowed him to avoid hundreds of years of meditation.

As for the remaining stages in Rockslide Wastelands, there were few people who could clear them. In Dao Kong's memories, there were only about three hundred something people who had managed to clear all nine stages in the first Striking Lands. Some of them were direct descendants, but most of them were from other races and were disciples of Morning Dao Sect.

However, compared to the direct descendants who could come to the Nine Striking Lands at any moment they wanted, those from the branch families and the disciples from the other races would need to apply for permission from their elders before they could enter.

Three hundred something people might not seem like much, but in truth, they were all who had managed to clear Rockslide Wastelands over the course of hundreds of thousands of years. If that number was spread through the years, then it would mean that there was practically only one disciple in Morning Dao Sect who could clear the first Striking Lands once every century or two.

However, this was just the first Striking Lands. There were nine of them, and each of them was more difficult than the last, just like how it was with the stages. Those who wanted to challenge the next land had to clear all nine stages of the first Striking Lands before obtaining the right. It did not matter whether they were from the branch family or disciples from other races, even the direct descendants had to obey this rule.

"The other nine Dynasts who were conferred the title have already cleared the nine stages of Rockslide Wastelands. I remember that you are ranked in the thousands of those in the first Striking Land, Your Highness. You seem... to have cleared the seventh stage? And then you failed about four hundred something times at the eighth stage, right?" The thin Ma Fei said with an apathetic expression as she cast him a deliberate look.

Su Ming did not speak. He averted his gaze from the Nine Striking Lands and turned to look towards the ninth continent before he spoke based on Dao Kong's memories.

"On which continent are the Sect Masters who egressed this time?"

There was a Sect Elder Chambers on each of the continents. One of them would be chosen by the three Sect Masters to handle the matters of Morning Dao Sect. Unless multiple Sect Elders egressed at the same time, only one Sect Elder Chamber was activate at any given time. The remaining eight Sect Elder Chambers would be in a sealed state.

"Dust Spirit Chamber, the third continent." The thin Ma Fei winked.

Without another word, Su Ming moved forward. He immediately turned into a long arc that charged towards the third continent with a roar. If someone only used numbers to label the continents which were located in a ring, it would be difficult for outsiders to identify them. However, with Dao Kong's memories, Su Ming did not hesitate, and he traveled so quickly that he instantly closed in on the third continent.

The land was vast, filled with tall mountains and forests. The trees were lush, and there were several cities built on the ground, looking like gigantic beasts deep in slumber. Waves of terrifying mighty pressure spread out in an indistinct manner from many spots on the continent.

Su Ming charged forward without stopping for even a moment. Gradually, three tall towers appeared at the easternmost part of the continent. Those three towers formed a triangle. There were threads of light connecting their tops. From the distance, those threads of light flashed, and as they connected with each other, they formed a triangle as well.

A gentle screen of light surrounded the area. It was round in shape, enveloping the three towers. As it stood above the ground, it looked like an air bubble. There was a glossy shine to it, and there were lightning sparks swimming through it. This scene made it seem as if there was a triangular foundation built under a huge crystal ball, or like it was a living creature's brain.

As Su Ming approached the place, waves of mighty pressure spread out. They went through the entire area, causing the place to become silent.

Su Ming stopped and landed on the ground. He stood on the earth, and a barely noticeable glint shone in his eyes while he wrapped his fist in his palm to bow towards the strange chamber.

"I, Dao Kong, would like to meet the three Sect Masters."

Only at that moment did Ma Fei arrive while gasping for breath, but she did not approach the place. Instead, she glared at Su Ming in an indignant manner while she was tens of thousands of feet away. Just then, when Su Ming charged through the air, he was so fast that in the blink of an eye, he had already disappeared without a trace. If

she did not have the treasure her Master had given her, she did not know just how long she would have needed to catch up to him.

Yet at that moment, the thin Ma Fei's pupils suddenly shrank. She took a few successive steps backwards with bewilderment and surprise on her face. In her eyes, she could clearly see a powerful light erupting from the Sect Elder Chamber. This light formed a triangular Rune that was formed by countless thin bolts of lightning. It rose from the Sect Elder Chamber and charged towards Su Ming. All of this happened at an incredibly quick speed and could be said to have occurred in an instant.

The triangular ring of light instantly landed on the spot where Su Ming stood. When it descended on the ground, it enveloped his body. The Rune was several hundreds of feet wide. At that moment, a screen of light made of lightning rose from all three sides of the triangle, and booming sounds roared without end.

Su Ming remained as calm as ever. There was not even the slightest change of expression on his face. When he lifted his head, he did not even cast a glance at the triangular lightning Rune which had surrounded him, but instead stared at the Sect Elder Chamber.

"Might I know what is the meaning of this, Sect Masters?"

A cold harrumph came from the Sect Elder Chamber.

"Who are you?!"

As the cold harrumph reverberated in the air, an old man with a grim and frightful air came out from the chamber, causing the area to instantly turn cold.

Su Ming remained as composed as ever. Not a single change could be detected on his face. He did not reveal a single thought in his mind. After going through all the things in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he had already perfected a level of control which he could execute as he pleased.

"I wonder what you mean by your words, Sect Masters." Su Ming smiled faintly.

"You're not answering?" The ghastly voice echoed in the air, and the triangular lightning Rune around Su Ming spun swiftly. Waves of piercing light shone, and a presence that could make even Su Ming feel that it was dangerous came from within it.

But Su Ming's expression remained the same. He stood quietly without moving. He simply allowed the triangular lightning Rune to shrink around his body. Based on the Rune's aura, it looked like it wanted to dismember Su Ming.

He was betting on that the Sect Masters in Morning Dao Sect were just suspecting him, but did not know for certain that he was not Dao Kong. If he was just a normal direct

descendant, they would not have bothered, but he had just been conferred the title of a Dynast. With that being the case, even if the three were Sect Masters, they could not kill him just because they wanted.

And more importantly, Su Ming... was completely unbothered by the triangular lightning Rune.

Even if the mighty pressure spreading from it made him feel incredibly threatened, if Su Ming had all his power erupt and had Ecang's true form appear, the Rune would only be able to deal superficial damage to him. It would not be able to cause anything real injury to him.

After all, it was just a Rune that could seal an Almighty in Mastery Realm.

It was completely out of the three Sect Masters' expectations that while Su Ming might seem like he was in Lunar Kalpa Realm, he was an unprecedented case among all those in Lunar Kalpa Realm. His physical body was so strong that he surpassed the tenacity of physical bodies possessed by those in Mastery Realm. Once he fused his cultivation base together with his clones, he could fight against the Almighties in Fate Realm. In fact, if he truly ran into a life-threatening crisis, Su Ming could call upon the fifth kiln and have it descend in True Morning Dao World.

With all that in his sleeves, he was completely unbothered by the three presences who belonged to the Sect Masters who had completed Fate Realm. The only thing he was concerned about was the hidden existences in Morning Dao Sect... as well as Progenitor Dao Chen, about whose identity Su Ming was still uncertain!

If his guess was correct, he could be as willful as he liked in Morning Dao Sect, as if he was in his home.

That was why he had the courage to take the gamble.

While Su Ming's expression remained unchanged, the triangular lightning Rune stopped an inch from him with a bang.

"The three of us are Morning Dao Sect's Sect Masters. Your level of cultivation has become vastly different from your past self after you returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. You also have an Almighty by your side, so we have to suspect that you were Possessed by a member of an alien race. We would not bother if you were a normal direct descendant, but since you are a Dynast, then surely you would not refuse to receive the Blood-Soul Fusion test." Another old man's voice came from within the Sect Elder Chamber. It appeared to be much calmer and was not as ghastly and chilling as the one before.

Without waiting for Su Ming to speak, the triangular lightning Rune around him turned blood-red before charging towards him. At the instant it pressed against his body, it

looked as if it had Branded itself on him. At the same time, a presence which caused Su Ming's blood to boil spread through him. It fused into his blood, seeped into his bones, and swam through his whole body. During that time, Su Ming remained as calm as ever.

When that presence swam through his body once, a dense, blood-red light immediately spread out from him with a bang. As it shone a long arc flew out from each of the three corners before turning into three pearls the size of a fist in the air above Su Ming.

"These three pearls are Bloodline Pearls which were sent out from Progenitor Dao Chen's isolation grounds ten thousand years ago. The power of our bloodline is strong in those pearls, and if we use them for the test, there will be no margin for error. You can rest assured." The third old man's voice came from one of the three towers. There was a gentleness to it as it echoed languidly in the air.

When Su Ming heard that sentence, a strange expression appeared briefly on his face.

The three pearls swiftly absorbed the blood-red light above Su Ming. After a moment, red light instantly shone from them, but it was slightly darker. It made Su Ming's pupils constrict.

He could clearly sense that at the moment the three blood red pearls appeared, his blood and soul started surging furiously. If Su Ming had not suppressed the, the force from those surges would have erupted from him at full force.

It was as if there was a presence within the three blood red pearls which caused Su Ming's heart to tremble fiercely. It was a presence that was incredibly familiar to him, but also somewhat unfamiliar, and a feeling rose in the depths of Su Ming's heart.

In silence, he suppressed the surging blood and soul. When they calmed down slightly, a loud bang rang out in his head. The blood red pearls immediately started absorbing all the blood-red light spreading out from Su Ming's body. Then, a piercing red light erupted from them, and it was so dense that it looked like it couldn't get any brighter. Then, it changed into silver!

That silver light dyed the sky and earth, enveloping the entire region, and it became the most impeccable color in the area!

Chapter 1065 Teachings from the Ancestors!

The silver light spread in all directions. The eyes of the thin Ma Fei tens of thousands of feet away widened at that moment. She had grown up in Morning Dao Sect, and while she might appear obedient and quiet beside her Master, she was in truth a very popular figure among the younger generation of Morning Dao Sect. Through her Master, she also got to know plenty of secrets other people did not know.

One of them was the Blood-Soul Fusion which she was seeing at that moment. Not a single accident or secret could be hidden from its view, since the elders had used three of the Morning Dao Blood Pearls the Progenitor had left behind to test the fusion level of the blood and soul on a fellow family member, and especially so when the test was directed by the three Sect Masters.

The Blood-Soul Fusion could detect whether a person had been Possessed and whether there was another soul in the body. After all, the soul and blood complemented each other. If there was a difference in them, then there would be hints of it even if they had fused within together. No perfect fusion existed, and it could be seen how much a person's soul and blood had fused together based on how thick the light which would shine from them would be. It would also allow for other to learn if the person tested was who they said they were.

The blood had to that of the direct descendants from Morning Dao Sect. This was the foundation of the test. If a person did not possess Dao Chen's blood, they would not be able to stimulate the three Dao Chen Blood Pearls to shine with a radiant blood-red light. Second came the soul. It had to have a high fusion rate with the blood to make the three blood-red pearls to shine with an even denser red light.

The denser the red light was, the closer to perfect was the fusion between the soul and the blood. When that level of fusion reached a certain level, a change would occur. This change was known as a reversion to ancestral roots, and this Blood-Soul Fusion could make silver light shine from the blood red pearls!

This was why Ma Fei had sucked in that breath. She knew that it was incredibly rare for the silver light to appear during the Blood-Soul Fusion test in Morning Dao Sect.

Almost at the instant the silver light shine, three people flew out from the three towers acting as the Sect Elder Chamber. All of them were old men dressed in ancient Daoist robes. They had solemn expressions on their faces.

Once they flew out, they stood in midair and stared at the three blood-red pearls shining with silver light above Su Ming's head.

One of the old men had a slightly tan face. He was frowning at that moment.

The other two were much calmer. There was even one of them who had a faint smile on his lips while nodding at Su Ming.

His blood was Dao Chen's blood, and his soul belonged to the direct descendants from Morning Dao Sect. The fusion between his soul and blood exceeded perfection and reached a level where it reverted to his ancestral roots. All of these were displayed incredibly clearly before the three Sect Masters' eyes.

"I still have a question. Why do the records state that the density of the light was high when you went through the Blood-Soul Fusion test after you were born, but you were far from reaching the state of reverting to your ancestral roots?" the old man with the tan face suddenly asked.

"As he becomes an adult and runs into some serendipitous events, the fusion between his soul and blood can become higher. There is nothing for us to suspect about this," the old man who had smiled said faintly. He was the person with the gentle voice.

"Oh, then why is it so unclear among our other family members, but so distinct on this person?!" The tanned old man snorted coldly. Just as he was about to continue speaking, a brilliant shine appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

"Sect Master... in regards to this, I have a question as well. Why is it that the other family members you spoke of were not chosen to be part of the ten Great Dynasts, but I was chosen? If you can provide an explanation to me about this, then I will offer an explanation to you." Su Ming's words were blunt and straightforward.

"The candidates for the ten Great Dynasts aren't decided by the Sect Masters. The orders of Progenitor Dao Chen determine your statuses. I cannot offer an explanation to you regarding this, but I am a Sect Master. Even if you are a Dynast, you haven't been truly made one. If I want you to give me the answer, then you must provide me with a satisfactory answer. You are not allowed to refuse," the tanned old man said coldly while swinging his arm.

Su Ming stared at the tanned old man before suddenly smiling. His smile spread through his face. As it turned aloof, it gave rise to an expression that seldom appeared on Su Ming's face—arrogance.

At the instant it showed up, Su Ming no longer suppressed the reaction formed by the connection between his blood, soul, and the blood-red pearls. Immediately, booming sounds rang out from within his body, and dense blood-red light burst forth from his body. Once it was completely absorbed by the pearls, the silver light grew so strong that it didn't seem like there could be an end to it.

At the instant the silver light dyed the world, the color of the three blood-red pearls suddenly changed again. This time, the light turned into such that caused all the people in the land sucked in a sharp breath—gold!

The golden light spread out and enveloped the land as well as the entire sky over the third continent, dyeing it gold and making all the people on the other continents to look over in disbelief.

It was especially so for the people on the ninety-nine continents beneath them. All those who raised their heads could see clearly that a golden light akin to sunlight had erupted from the third continent far above them.

"Red is perfection, silver is a reversion to ancestral roots, and gold... is surpassing ancestral roots! Who... Who is going through the Blood-Soul Fusion test? How could that person reach such a state? This is impossible, this is..."

Among the countless mountains, cave abodes, and numerous cities on the other eight continents were members of Morning Dao Sect. At that moment, all of them walked out to look towards the golden light shining over the third continent.

"Over the course of numerous years, no one has ever had golden light when they went through the Blood-Soul Fusion test in Morning Dao Sect. The golden light symbolizing surpassing ancestral roots is just a legend, but now, this... this is..."

"Once the golden light symbolizing someone surpassing ancestral roots appears, the entire world must worship the person. This is a teaching from our ancestors!"

Uproars rose and fell in the other eight continents. Compared to them, the noise in the ninety-nine continents beneath them was so great that it caused booming waves of sound to spread in all directions. The other nine Dynasts swiftly walked out of their chambers and stared at the sky. They could sense an incredibly great threat from that golden light.

"Who is it? Who is it?!"

"Is it Dao Kong? He is the only person in the Sect Elder Chamber right now!"

"It can't be him. It's impossible for it to be him. If it's really him, then since he has the golden light from the Blood-Soul Fusion test... What right do we have to fight against him?!"

On the fifty-sixth continent among the ninety-nine was an incredibly lavish palace. The man who had previously made arrangements for Dao Fei Xian to test Su Ming had an incredibly sullen expression at that moment while standing outside the palace and staring at the golden light from the third continent in the plane above him. His expression distorted. When he clenched his right fist, veins popped up on the back of his hand.

'There's a high chance that it's that Dao Kong. The Sect Elder Chamber would only cast the Blood-Soul Fusion test so suddenly only for him. Grandfather must have wanted to intimidate Dao Kong, so that's why this happened.

'But... damn it, why does he have the golden light?! How could he have the golden light?!"

The man unfurled his fist. With a bang, the lavish palace behind him collapsed. When it shattered, it was reduced to countless pieces that tumbled backwards, at his servants

who had slightly weaker levels of cultivation and were standing outside the palace. All of them were reduced to bloody mess amid the rubble.

"Make arrangements. Send the Five-Colored Stone as a gift to Senior Lin Luo and ask him to attack!"

When the middle-aged man mentioned the Five-Colored Stone, he felt pain in his heart. But a glint appeared in his eyes, and he lifted his right hand, in which a jade slip appeared. He furled his hand tightly, and his divine thought was instantly Branded inside it. With a fling of his arm, the jade slip split into eight parts before spreading out to charge towards the other Dynasts—all besides Su Ming—who had equal status and who were located in different spots on the ninety-nine continents.

At the same time, on a continent covered in an ocean which was Dao Kong's homeland, an excited look appeared on Xu Hui's face when she saw the golden, sun-like light from the third continent. As she stared at it, she was certain that it was due to Su Ming.

Even though she did not know how Su Ming managed to do it, but the appearance of the golden light would chase away all the fog of doubt. From then on, no one would question his bloodline.

From the moment Su Ming became a Dynast, the nine old Frail Dynasts, the direct descendants in the land belonging to Dao Kong's family, and all the other cultivators from the other races already had their fates tied to him, so at that moment, they were also incredibly excited.

If the continents below were already in a state of extreme excitement, then it would be even more so for the third continent. The thin Ma Fei was flabbergasted, and her mind was blank. Her body had also turned gold due to the light dyeing it in such a color.

The three Sect Masters, including the tanned old man, were also stunned to their feet by the golden light surging into the sky from the blood-red pearls above Su Ming at that moment, even if they had extraordinary power.

It was especially so for the tanned old man. Disbelief had appeared on his face. As his expression changed, he found himself unable to accept what he was seeing. No matter what, he would have never been able to guess that the fusion between Dao Kong's blood and soul might be so perfect that... it reached such an unimaginable and almost unprecedented state.

"Now, do I still need to explain myself to you?" With a placid expression, Su Ming sensed his blood boiling.

The tanned old man's expression changed. He sucked in a deep breath, and a complicated look settled on his face.

All his suspicions, his guesses, and his doubts had disappeared without a trace at the instant the golden light spread out. If anyone still wanted to suspect Dao Kong to have been Possessed, then it would be the same as suspecting that Morning Dao Sect's Progenitor Dao Chen had been Possessed. This would then add another speculation—the person who Possessed Progenitor Dao Chen had a blood connection with Dao Kong, or else this scene would not have appeared, that was why... no one would dare to suspect him, and no one would dare to doubt him. They simply couldn't do it!

"I remember that there is a teaching from our ancestors in Morning Dao Sect," Su Ming stated flatly, and his gaze landed on the tanned old man.

"Greetings, Your Highness!"

The two old men beside the tanned one had excitement on their faces at that moment. They were certain that Su Ming was a direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect, and he was also the future hope of Morning Dao Sect. Even if their levels of cultivation were high, they still obeyed the teachings from their ancestors and wrapped their fists in their palms to bow towards Su Ming.

"Greetings... Your Highness!" The tanned old man hesitated for a moment before he lowered his head and wrapped his fist in his palm to bow towards Su Ming as well.

Su Ming let his eyelids fall slightly. Several breaths later, he opened them. Immediately, booming sounds rang out around him. The triangular lightning Rune shattered, and he walked out in a relaxed manner.

Chapter 1066 Prelude to Causing a Stir

It was just a mere triangular lightning Rune. Even if it had extraordinary power, it could not seal Su Ming who had replaced the completed Ecang. Even if Su Ming's Ecang could not compare with the Ecang who could act in an unbridled manner in the universe in terms of cultivation, they belonged in the same category of life forms.

What Su Ming needed was time. As it passed, his Ecang clone would grow until he reached the state of Ecang in the past and... surpassed it, reaching a pinnacle that no one had ever reached before. After all, Su Ming had another status besides Ecang's true form—he was someone who belonged to Old Man Extermination!

Based on Su Ming's understanding, Old Man Extermination was an old man from Dark Dawn's camp. He was so strong that it was difficult to estimate his level of cultivation. He was the strongest person Su Ming had ever come to know.

Su Ming had always had his speculations that there was a high possibility that such a strong person... would not have any sort of limitations placed on him even though he

came from Dark Dawn, but Su Ming did not have a lot of clues regarding the details, so it was difficult for him to know the truth.

However, there was another speculation that always lurked in his mind: Why were Dark Dawn and Saint Defier against each other?

This was something that Su Ming had never been able to figure out before he met the golden mosquito, but through it and the golden drop of blood, he felt that... he might have caught a hint of truth.

Dark Dawn and Saint Defier counteracted each other, so if they devoured the other, they would immediately become stronger. This was something Su Ming felt clearly when the Seed of Life Extermination devoured the golden blood and showed signs swiftly recovering.

If that was the case, then perhaps... Dark Dawn and Saint Defier were enemies because devouring the other party could make them stronger. If they could destroy the other camp, they could rule all universes!

'Cultivators practice cultivation to mend the flaws in their bodies until they are perfect...'

Su Ming buried his question and speculation in the depths of his heart. At the moment he walked out of the triangular lightning Rune, his gaze fell on the three Sect Masters in front of him.

The old man who had shown good will to Su Ming right from the start wrapped his fist in his palm and said, "Our cautiousness beforehand must have surely offended you greatly. Please forgive us, Your Highness. It is simply because your growth has been too great since you came back from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and we could not attribute your growth to any reason.

"There are no longer any questions within us. Three days later, the Anointment Ceremony will be held, and then you will go through challenges and trials. With your level of cultivation, this will naturally be as easy as breathing for you. Allow me to congratulate you beforehand." The old man smiled. When he looked towards Su Ming, a kindly look appeared in his eyes.

The other old man also nodded with a smile. As Sect Masters in Morning Dao Sect, they were naturally very happy to be able to see a person with the golden bloodline. Only the tanned old man remained silent by the side.

"I have also offended all of you previously. I hope that the both of you will not blame me for it."

Su Ming might be temperamental, but the two old men before him were very courteous to him, and the praise on their faces was also very genuine, hence he wrapped his fist

in his palm to return the greeting. That was how Su Ming was like. If others respected him, he would naturally not treat them with malicious words.

As for the tanned old man, he completely ignored him.

Now that the previous misunderstanding between them could be considered to have been resolved, Su Ming obtained the plate of a Dynast, and only then was he truly regarded as having officially returned to Morning Dao Sect. Once he wrapped his fist in his palm to thank the two Sect Masters, he turned around and left in the form of a long arc.

The thin Ma Fei had been shocked by what Su Ming had done. At that moment, she quickly followed behind him, and with wide, flashing eyes, she occasionally sized up Su Ming. There was an expression of interest on her face.

When Su Ming left and the golden light over the third continent faded away, the three old men outside the Sect Elder Chamber stayed still for a time. The old man who had remained amicable to Su Ming since the start turned his head sideways to cast a glance at the tanned Sect Master.

"Yu Lin, you were a little too reckless with this."

The tanned old man let out a cold harrumph, and a dark light shone in his eyes.

"I've already sent someone to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence to investigate everything that happened in that place when he was there. He'll be back soon. At that time, we'll know what happened and why Dao Kong's power increased so much," the tanned old man said with a cold tone.

"So what if you know? He already went through the Blood-Soul Fusion test and it shone with golden light. That is the sign of him surpassing our ancestral roots. Based on the teachings of our ancestors, as long as he doesn't do anything that betrays Morning Dao Sect, we are not to interfere with his actions," the other man said with a frown.

"I've already sent that person, so whatever you say at this point is meaningless. When he returns in a few days, our questions will all be answered. After all, we do not communicate with those in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. We'll soon know everything that happened there," the tanned old man retorted coldly before turning around and swinging his arm before dashing towards the tower he'd chosen as his meditation grounds. The other two Sect Masters exchanged glances with each other, then shook their heads before heading back to their own towers.

The tanned old man sat down cross-legged in his tower. Within its silence, his expression was incredibly sullen. He had intended to make things difficult for Dao Kong because he was made a Dynast and there were people from his own family who were

made Dynasts. Because of that, it would have been good if he could have killed Dao Kong.

But he did not expect this sort of result. Not only did he not get to kill Dao Kong, he instead caused Dao Kong to gain more influence. After this, everyone in Morning Dao Sect would know about his golden bloodline.

'Golden bloodline...' The tanned old man's eyes glimmered faintly. He lifted his right hand, and a jade slip appeared on his palm. With a light squeeze, it disappeared without a trace.

'I will spread this to the galaxy beyond. The forces of power in the Immortals' Union will surely be interested in Dao Kong's golden bloodline.' A faint smile appeared on the tanned old man's face.

'Also, he definitely has plenty of secrets from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. The person I sent over is a True Guard who had once been to the barren lands. With him going over to investigate things, I will definitely learn plenty of things about which the others will not be aware. If I make some estimations, he should be able to return around the time of the ceremony. At that moment, he will be able to reveal Dao Kong's secrets from the barren lands in front of all the disciples of Morning Dao Sect...

'Perhaps it's not enough for me along to be doubting him, but if I can make all the disciples in Morning Dao Sect suspect him, then even if he has the golden bloodline, he will need to offer up an explanation.

'Then I will use it to cancel his status of a Dynast before he is truly made one!'

A cold sneer curled up the tanned old man's lips while he closed his eyes. He looked forward to what sort of results the person he sent to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence would bring to all the disciples in Morning Dao Sect.

Su Ming left the third continent and returned to Dao Kong's continent—the land covered by an ocean. What welcomed him was another round of excited cheers which lasted till nightfall. Only then did silence slowly settle over the continent.

It was late at night when Su Ming sat on a cliff by himself. In his ears were the sounds of waves crashing against the rocks. Before him was an ocean whose end could not be seen. It might be night, and the light from the moon might not be bright, but all those in the continent could still see how vast the ocean was and smell the scent rought by the sea breeze.

Xu Hui came to sit beside Su Ming to watch the ocean with him. The two dogs which were the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon came over and sprawled themselves by the side while yawning as well.

Su Ming stared at the ocean. He remembered South Morning and the Berserkers there who were submerged under the water. He remembered the ninth summit, his senior brothers, and he wondered whether they were still in the land of Berserkers or if they had managed to walk out...

Su Ming shook his head. After all, one thousand something years had passed since then. It was just too much time. Besides the memories, there was nothing else he had left about them.

Xu Hui tugged the strands of her hair which had been lifted by the sea breeze, then turned her head to look at Su Ming's pensive expression. "Do you like this place?" she asked quietly.

"What about you?" Su Ming did not answer her but threw the question back at her.

"I don't really like it." Xu Hui shook her head. "This place doesn't belong to me. It's a pity my sect has become a member of the Immortals' Union. I feel slightly uncomfortable in this place." Xu Hui sighed softly.

"If a day arrives when this place belongs to me, then I will like it," Su Ming said faintly.

Xu Hui did not speak. She looked at the ocean, and after remaining silent for a moment, she turned her head around to stare at Su Ming once more. A complicated expression flashed briefly on her face. But just as she was about to say something, he suddenly spoke up,

"The complicated expression on your face has appeared several times before. It was the most prominent on you when I saved you in the fifth kiln. Xu Hui, everyone has their own secrets..." Su Ming picked up a stone by his side and lightly threw it into the ocean where it was submerged by seawater.

"Those secrets are like stones. When they fall into the ocean, they disappear without a trace, but if we want to fish them out, it's rather difficult."

"I..." Xu Hui hesitated for a moment.

"Don't tell me. There are certain things upon which you can lord for as long you don't say them. But once you give them voice, you will become their servant." Su Ming turned his head around and stared at Xu Hui.

She remained silent for some time before biting her bottom lip and lowering her head. In a few moments, she asked faintly, "Once you are made a true Dynast, I'd like to leave your side for some time to settle some personal matters."

"Do you need me around?" Su Ming asked with sincerity.

"Not for the moment, but if I really need your help, you'll know." Xu Hui lifted her head and looked at Su Ming with a smile. There was an unrestrained, free air to it. The shackles that had always held her from the shadows were gone.

"This sort of smile is the most beautiful. Even if you have quite a lot of moles, you're still very beautiful." Su Ming smiled.

"Well, I guess having the person who can't win against me in drinking describing me this way is also a form of honor, hmm?"

When Xu Hui heard Su Ming's words, she immediately retorted, but once she finished speaking, she was the first to cover her mouth and laugh. Her covered mouth and open eyes which had curved into the shape of crescent moons seemed to be reflecting the moonlight in the sky and giving her an even more elegant charm.

The bald crane cast a sideways glance at Su Ming and Xu Hui before it snorted in its heart while thinking to itself that Su Ming and Xu Hui really dallied with their actions. If it was in their place, then if it had found someone it fancied, it would immediately make its moves on them. It would definitely not spend so much time flirting with the other.

The big dog which was the Abyss Dragon also snorted in its heart, but it was more of a grumble.

Chapter 1067 Anointment Ceremony

Time trickled by slowly. One day, two day, three days.

During the morning of the third day, a solemn bell toll reverberated through all the continents of the four planes in Morning Dao Sect—the 9,999 continents in the fourth plane, the 999 continents in the third plane, the ninety-nine continents in the second plane, and the nine continents in the first plane. At that moment, a bell toll echoed in through air of the highest plane.

The bell tolled ninety-nine times. It signified the peak of all numbers as well as the start of the Anointment Ceremony which was the center of attention for all disciples in Morning Dao Sect.

The ceremony would last for some time, and during it, besides the War Chamber which remained in the galaxy beyond to prevent the Immortals' Union from invading their world, all other disciples would rush back to Morning Dao Sect through the Relocation spots to attend the Anointment Ceremony.

The place where the ceremony was held was the center of the nine continents of the upper plane. On the day the ceremony started to the day it ended, all barriers around

the nine continents in the upper plane would be taken down, allowing all disciples to gain access to the place. In fact, they could even join the ceremony.

At the end of the Anointment Ceremony, the ten Great Dynasts would go through various challenges and trials. In the end, when they were truly made Dynasts, the representatives from the other three Great True Worlds would come to bear witness to Morning Dao Sect's ten Great Heirs. There would be plenty of messengers from the other three Great True Worlds, and they would all be outstanding people.

In fact, based on tradition, there would even be a competition between the heirs of the four Great True Worlds. This would be the liveliest event in many years within True Morning Dao World, and it would be an incredibly grand ceremony.

When morning arrived and the bell tolls rang out, loud booms came from each continent. They shook the sky and earth, causing the universe to seem to tremble under the sound. Sound waves crashed against the surface of the sea within Dao Ocean, Morning Dao Sect's forbidden grounds, as well as rising into the nine heavens.

Fusing with those sounds were the drums which were one hundred feet big being struck on all 9,999 continents of the fourth plane.

There were also sounds coming from 999 large drums located on the continents in the third plane. These drums were one thousand feet big and would only make sound when one hundred people surrounded them and struck one at the same time.

Ten thousand feet tall drums roared from the ninety-nine continents in the second plane. As the drumming and the bell tolls fused together, countless cultivators prepared to depart on each of the continents in Morning Dao Sect. They were all waiting for the ceremony to start.

After a moment, as the sound of the drums reached a state when it could shake the sky and earth, an old, awe-inspiring voice came from the air above and reverberated through the whole world.

"Cultivators do not need any form of extravagance in anything, even if it is an Anointment Ceremony. We only need to do things in a dignified manner! The disciples from other races form the foundation of Morning Dao Sect, and we cannot have them lacking, which is why the first batch of the people who can come here... are the disciples from the other races in the 9,999 continents in the fourth plane as well as those in the 999 continents from the third plane!"

As that voice echoed in the air, the drums rumbled once again. Long arcs flew up from the 9,999 continents and 999 continents in the fourth and third plane to charge towards the center of the nine continents in the first plane.

There were countless long arcs, and anyone standing within Morning Dao Sect could see them cover the sky. They were innumerable. When anyone cast their gaze over them, they seem like raindrops rising from the ground, making it seem as if the world had been turned upside down.

One hundred thousand... one million... up to ten million long arcs appeared at the same time in the sky. It was a shocking sight that most people would not be able to see in their lives. At that moment, it was as if the world was about to be torn apart, as if the universe was about to topple over. With an astonishing momentum, ten million long arcs stirred up a violent gust of wind as they charged forward as if they could crush all forms of law.

The long arcs moved swiftly past the ninety-nine continents in the second plane and rushed to the place at the center of the nine continents in the first plane.

Wherever they went, the ninety-nine continents in the second plane would tremble, and it caused the ocean in Dao Kong's continent to tumble about. Violent gusts of wind from all directions swept past violently and stirred up a momentum that was as great as tidal waves. It was difficult to describe such a scene with words.

All of this was enough to shock all those who saw it.

This kind of event was Morning Dao Sect's show of respect to the disciples from the other races. They could also let the direct descendants of the sect know through it that even if they were direct descendants and even Dynasts, they still had to value the disciples from the other races.

Because they were the foundation!

Once the ten million long arcs charged over, the commotion gradually died down. When the booming slowly calmed and the ten million cultivators reached the center of the nine continents in the first plane, the old, awe-inspiring voice spoke once more.

"The next to enter would be the members of the branch families. Your ancestors are from the Immortals, and your people have given up everything for Morning Dao Sect. As for you, you will naturally receive Morning Dao Sect's protection, but I believe that some among you will surpass your ancestors and stimulate your bloodlines... so that you will become direct descendants!"

At the instant that voice echoed in the air, cultivators from the ninety-nine continents in the second plane flew up. Their numbers were much fewer; there was only about one million of them. As they rose up, they charged through to the center of the nine continents. They possessed varying levels of cultivation, and while the momentum of the violent gust of wind they stirred up was not as great as the one caused by the ten million disciples from the other races, their presence was still shocking.

"The ones who will step in next are the direct descendants of Morning Dao Sect. You are direct descendants because your ancestors are all in the Council of Sect Masters. As long as they are around, their bloodline will remain. However... if you are arrogant because of this and do not move forward, then when the day comes and your ancestor either dies in battle or passes away of old age, you will be reduced to a branch family and will lose your right to be proud."

The awe-inspiring tone in the old voice was incredibly great at that moment. In fact, there was a hint of intimidation within it, and the hearts of most direct descendants trembled. Then, they immediately rose into the air, and with all their power, they brought forth the most dazzling presence they could muster. Long arcs of tens of thousands of people flew up from the ninety-nine continents.

The hundreds of direct descendants from the continent which belonged to Dao Kong also erupted with all their power. In the midst of the loud bangs, tens of thousands of people sliced through the air and charged towards the spot at the center of the nine continents in the first plane.

"The last to come forth will be the ten heirs who are to be anointed this time, the ten Great Dynasts of Morning Dao Sect! But you must remember, you are now only quasi Dynasts, not true Dynasts. You must all face challenges, and if you fails in them, they will lose your right to be a quasi Dynast. Any disciple who wins against you will be able to obtain your status!

"Even if that disciple belongs to another race or one of the branch families, as long as they win against you, they can take everything that belongs to you!

"Even if you manage to persevere through the challenges, you must still go through the trials. If you fail during the trials, you will lose your right to be a Dynast. If nine of you fail and only one remains, that one will be the sole Dynast. And if one of you fails while the other nine remain, then there will be nine Great Dynasts in Morning Dao Sect!

"If all of you fail, then we will choose ten other people to become Dynasts and go through the same challenges and trials. So... you must value your current status!

"Ten Great Dynasts, come forth!" the old voice said in an sterner tone. The level of severity in his words surpassed that which was used for the direct descendants just moments ago. As the words echoed in the air, several long arcs flew up from the ground.

Su Ming lifted his head to stare above himself. With a calm expression on his face, he walked towards the sky. When he cast his gaze across the area, he saw only nine other arcs!

As they approached the spot between the nine continents in the first plane, they gradually saw each other. In an instant, Su Ming sensed the other nine looking towards him.

All of them were men, and most of them appeared to be middle-aged, but it was impossible to discern their real ages based on their physical appearances.

They were staring at Su Ming, and he was staring back at them. A glint appeared in their eyes before they averted their gazes. The ten people then turned into long arcs and rushed upwards.

The competition had already started in an unseen manner. From another point of view, whoever was the fastest would be the one with the highest level of cultivation, and whoever was the slowest would give the impression of being the weakest, even though this was not absolute. That person would usually be the one who would be the main pick for the other disciples who would challenge them.

The candidates for the ten Great Dynasts were all chosen by Progenitor Dao Chen, but even though they had been chosen, there were plenty of powerful warriors among the direct descendants, people from the branch families, and the vast pool of disciples from the other races. There would be no one who would truly accept a simple choosing from above, and it was the reason why when they looked towards Su Ming and the other nine, their gazes were filled with hostility.

Those who replaced them would make a name for themselves in Morning Dao Sect and become Dynasts worshiped by hundreds of millions of people. To the direct descendants, even if they could not become the master of True Morning Dao World in the end, it would be enough glory. Because of that, they were incredibly excited and agitated before the challenge. After all, it might be the one and only time when they could truly snatch such a glory without being restricted by their blood.

That was why when the ten Dynasts flew up, the hundred million cultivators in the air cast their gazes on them. Quite a number of them looked towards Su Ming. After all, compared to the other nine, he was more mysterious and rather unfamiliar.

The ten quasi Dynasts of Morning Dao Sect charged forward. Even though they did not bring out their full power, they still used an incredibly fast speed to instantly dash to the center of the nine continents.

One of the three who were the fastest was the middle-aged man who had made arrangements for Dao Fei Xian to test Su Ming.

Upon noticing him, a barely noticeable glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. He lifted his foot, and with a single move, a loud bang rang out around him. It was loud as a sonic boom, and fog appeared around him. It looked as if it had swept up his body, and his speed increased in an instant. When his foot landed, he had already overtaken the three at the

front. When he took another step forward, he reached the center of the nine continents in the first plane.

What Su Ming wanted was a show of arrogance and intimidation, which was why he did not conceal his speed. He did not show all he had, but that was because he did not need to be extremely fast, just faster than the other nine.

Booming sounds echoed in the air, and the other people arrived one after another at the center.

"All ten of you, go to your spots immediately. The first part of the Anointment Ceremony shall begin! All those who challenge the Dynasts will not have their survivals accounted for!" the old voice stated straight away. This time, there was a grim and cold tone to it.

Chapter 1068 Challenge from Seven Million...

If anyone raised their heads from the ninety-nine continents on the second plane, they would feel as if the space at the center of the nine continents in the upper realm was not exactly very big, but in truth, if they were there at that spot, they would be able to tell that this particular spot had no bounds.

That place could accommodate ten million people at the same time, and there would still be plenty of space left.

At that moment, there were eleven gigantic lotus platforms in the air. The lotus platform at the center was the biggest, and it was about several hundreds of thousands of feet big. Surrounding it were ten other smaller lotus platforms.

Farther away were circles of stones shining with five-colored lights. Standing on each stone were Morning Dao Sect cultivators, and the densely packed stones illuminated the place in five different colors. There were more than ten million cultivators standing within them.

Anyone who looked over would find such a scene incredibly astonishing.

There was a circle of drums at the outermost region. Rousing drum rolls spread through the galaxy and echoed in the air.

Standing on the biggest lotus platform in the center at that moment was an old man. He was dressed in a golden long robe. His face was old, but when he opened his eyes, there was brilliant light shining within them. All those who fell into his line of sight immediately felt as if their life force was boiling.

There was only one possible reason for a person to be able to cause this effect... and that was being in Life Realm!

And he was not any ordinary Almighty in Life Realm. He had reached it a long time ago, and his power was so great and deep that he was a powerful existence which could shock all people's hearts.

Behind that old man were three other people. Su Ming had seen them before. Needless to say, they were the Sect Masters in charge of managing all things for that century in Morning Dao Sect. However, based on their location, it could be seen that their status was clearly not as great as that of the old man in Life Realm.

There were incredibly exquisite and lavish tables with auspicious beasts carved on them placed around the lotus platform where the old man stood. There were thousands of these tables, but all of them were empty. The bright ones among the people immediately understood what it meant—the tables were prepared for those who would come from the other three Great True Worlds to congratulate the Dynasts when they were truly anointed.

As the old man's ancient voice spread out, the nine Dynasts who came with Su Ming instantly moved and spread through the ten smaller lotus platforms. Su Ming took a step forward and also landed on one of them. At the instant he did so, a dazzling light spread out from the lotus platform beneath him.

It was also not the only one that acted this way. The lotus platforms of the other nine Dynasts were the same. Because of it, the dazzling lights made it seem as if ten beautiful lotuses had bloomed in space. In fact, there were even waves of faint fragrance spreading through the area.

This scene caused Su Ming and the others to instantly become the most striking people in the crowd. They became the most brilliant suns in Morning Dao Sect at that moment.

"Morning Dao Sect..." With the usual aged and awe-inspiring voice, the old man in Life Realm began to speak at the center of the large lotus platform. "The disciples from the other races form the foundation, the descendants of the branch families form the venous pathways... while the direct descendants are Morning Dao Sect's soul, which is why even though the ten of you are only quasi Dynasts, to show that you are different from the others, you were granted the right to stand on Morning Dao Sect's lotus platforms. On behalf of Progenitor Dao Chen, I will also temporarily grant the ten of you the Lotus Constellation Robe!

"Whether or not you will continue to be in possession of this robe will depend on whether you can stand till the end of the ceremony! I will tell this straight to all of you that the robe has not been activated, but just wearing it will allow the ten of you to borrow the power of True Morning Dao World's kismet. It will aid you in gaining

epiphanies, and your growth in your path of cultivation will surpass that of the others by several hundred times!

"With this robe, practicing cultivation for one year will be equivalent to training for a hundred years!

"When it is truly activated, its defensive properties will allow you to withstand a full-powered strike from an Almighty in Mastery Realm. In fact, it also contains a hint of the will from Progenitor Dao Chen. You can only use it once, but even if it is just once, it will still be enough for you to kill an Almighty in Mastery Realm!

"When you have become true Dynasts, you will be allowed to go to the Progenitor's isolation grounds, and Progenitor Dao Chen will personally activate the robe!"

As the old man's voice echoed in the air, the breathing of the ten million people quickened. At the same time, the light from the ten lotus platforms on which Su Ming and the others stood lit up with an even more dazzling and piercing light. When it reached a blinding degree, the lotuses bloomed. Petals appeared out of nowhere and surrounded Su Ming as well as the other nine. At the same time, the Sacred Constellation Robe they wore shone with a dazzling light as if reflecting the light from the petals.

In an instant, those petals charged towards Su Ming and fused into the Sacred Constellation Robe. All of the robes, including Su Ming's, transformed. The stars in them moved to form a flourishing lotus made by countless stars grouped together!

Su Ming's gaze focused. He immediately sensed waves of strange aura spreading out from his robe. That aura was nourishing his body. It not only refreshed his mind, but also made him feel as if he would swiftly recover from all injuries he suffered from then on.

Su Ming could also clearly feel the power which allowed the wearer to obtain the progress equivalent to one hundred years with just one year of training. The flow of time on the robe was clearly different from the world around it. Because of that, the wearers seemed to be shrouded in a fog when anyone looked at them, making it hard for them to see Su Ming and the other nine Dynasts' faces. They gave a feeling of being about to fuse with the air.

The thin line between illusion and reality naturally resulted in a mysterious air that turned into mighty pressure. This was the great difference between the Dynasts' status and identities to those of the other people.

Su Ming was not the only person who felt that way. At that moment, the other nine Dynasts also lowered their heads to look at the flourishing lotuses on their bodies as their expressions changed.

At the same time, the gazes from the ten million cultivators instantly focused on the ten Dynasts. In those gazes were greed, indignation, jealousy, and also envy.

Various expressions and emotions could be seen, and it looked as if all that a person could possibly feel in their life could be found among the ten million people.

"The ten of you must have surely noticed the effects of the robes. I can tell you this, that flourishing lotus on your bodies is a supreme treasure which Progenitor Dao Chen had personally created when he was in isolation. This supreme treasure has a terrifying divine ability. Its name is the same as that of the robe - Flourishing Lotus.

"It is a divine ability Progenitor Dao Chen had come to understand while he was in isolation. It has fused into your robes, and you can activate it on your own, causing the robe to remember you at your strongest, as if time had been frozen at that particular moment. Then, when you are injured badly or have your life threatened, you can activate this Art to turn back time and instantly return to the state the robe remembers, when you were at your strongest," the old man in Life Realm said faintly. His words were relaxed, but while the others could not tell, he was in truth also incredibly tempted by the ten Flourishing Lotuses.

If he was tempted, then it would be even more so for the three Sect Masters behind him. The ten million cultivators around him also started breathing raggedly, and due to there being ten million of them, the sound of their breathing was akin to thunder. Gazes filled with powerful desire landed on the ten Dynasts, and it was certain that their owners' fighting spirit had been lit.

"Whosoever becomes the Dynast will be able to obtain this. Even if you are a disciple from other races and even if you cannot become the master of True Morning Dao World, you will still be able to obtain this Lotus Constellation Robe!

"Now is the time for the first step of the Anointment Ceremony, the challenges! Your divine senses have already fused with this land, so you will only need to direct your gaze to the Dynast you wish to challenge and spark your fighting spirit. The person with the strongest fighting spirit will be automatically sent to the lotus platform with the Dynast they wish to challenge. Choose the quasi Dynasts you wish to challenge. All disciples who have arrived here and stand on the five-colored stone platforms have the right to challenge them.

"However, I have to give you a final warning. Challengers are not allowed to kill, but the ten Dynasts who have been challenged have the right to kill!" The old man cast a glance at the ten million cultivators around them. When he turned his head around, he cast a glance at Su Ming and the other nine.

"Each time you manage to win against a person, the lotus platform beneath you and the robes on you will give life force for you to recover from all your wounds. I will provide that life force, so even if you are continuously challenged throughout the seven days,

you will not lack any life force. You can fight without any worry," the old man in Life Realm said flatly. There was no arrogance on his face, but his words were filled with confidence. When he swung his arm, his next words immediately echoed in all directions.

"The challenge begins!" His voice rumbled, and some people among the ten million instantly spread out their powerful fighting spirit. Once it fused with the air, they charged towards Su Ming and the other nine.

It was at that moment that a loud boom came from Su Ming's lotus platform. A cloud and fog manifested swiftly above Su Ming, as if there was something powerful crashing against him. Most of the lotus platforms for the others went through the same thing, but the sound of something crashing against the fog and cloud were far less powerful than near Su Ming.

In an instant, an ancient runic symbol appeared in the midst of those clashes. There were ten platforms and ten runic symbols, but they were all completely different from each other.

The runic symbols were ancient letters. Each of them represented a number, and it meant just how many people were challenging the ten people. They told the Dynasts the approximate number of their challengers.

As the runic symbols for the ten lotus platforms appeared, an uproar rose into the air like a clap of thunder from among the ten million people.

"Who is that?! There're... There're seven million people challenging him!"

"That person is an unfamiliar face, but he's definitely that Dao Kong! Looks like our fellow sect members are hesitant about the others, which is why they chose to challenge him!"

"But it's rumored that this person killed Dao Fei Feng and even tens of thousands of cultivators from the Immortals' Union, isn't it?"

"So what? It's because he has a powerful follower that he could do it."

As loud voices reverberated in the air, Su Ming lifted his head to look at the runic symbol representing a number which had formed after the fighting spirits had crashed against the fog and cloud above him. His expression was slightly dark. Compared to him, the other Dynasts only had about a million or even couple tens of thousands of cultivators challenging them.

Chapter 1069 Hello, Everyone, My Name Is De Shun

As Su Ming frowned, a person appeared on his platform. At the same time, most of the other Dynasts were sent their challengers as well. Only... two platforms were completely empty of challengers from Morning Dao Sect.

One of the Dynasts standing on the two empty platforms was a young man who had an aloof expression on his face. A freezing aura spread out from his body, and it seemed to have frozen the air around him. There was also a mark of a snowflake at the center of his brows.

There were no challengers on his platform.

There was another platform which was empty of challengers, too. On it stood a middle-aged man. His face was rather pale, as if he was sick. He was smiling while he sat cross-legged, and he had an indifferent expression on his face. In his hand was a blue ball of light shining with a gentle light. He gave off a completely different feeling from the young man, but still, no one challenged him.

Su Ming's expression was dark. If anyone was in his place, then having seven million people challenging them right from the start would be equivalent to them issuing him a challenge letter. Seven million challenges was equivalent to seven-tenths of the people in the place.

It was especially frown-worthy when Su Ming saw... the man who appeared on his lotus platform throw his head back and laugh the moment he appeared. There was an arrogant and smug undercurrent to his laughter, and he even had the gall to not first look at Su Ming. Instead, he turned around to look at the crowd behind him, then wrapped his fist in his palm to them before speaking up with excitement.

"My fellow sect members, thank you for modestly declining your right to challenge him and letting me have the fortune of becoming the first challenger in this place. Now, allow me to see just how good is this Dao Kong!"

The next moment, the man became the center of attention, and he stood out even more than Su Ming. As he laughed, he turned his head around, and with a ferocious smile, he looked at his opponent. A hint of greed appeared in his eyes, and when he lifted his right leg, he stepped forward to move towards Su Ming.

At that instant, a screen of light immediately rose at the edges of the lotus platform. It immediately separated the platform from the world around it, preventing the people there from seeing what was happening inside.

Because of it, since the others could not see what was going on inside, they would also be unable to know what transpired in the battle.

When the screen of light appeared, Su Ming swept his gaze across it. He was completely unbothered by the incoming man. A loud bang rose from the that person's

body, and the power belonging to those in the middle stage of World Plane Realm instantly erupted from within him. This power went out in all directions and stirred up a whirlwind that swept through the whole area.

A glint appeared in the man's eyes. He raised his right hand and formed a seal. In an instant, the whirlwind beside him shrank to form a gigantic wind blade in front of him. As it roared, it looked as if it was about to slice apart air along with Su Ming. At the same time, the man took a step forward.

At that moment, shrill screams of pain came from the areas hidden by the screens of light. They were the final cries of several challengers before they were killed.

Su Ming frowned. He did not even look at the howling wind blade as it came towards him. When he lifted his right hand, he swung it forward. With it, the incoming wind blade shuddered before instantly collapsing. It shattered into several parts, but it did not dissipate. Instead, it tumbled backwards with a bang, and as the man was momentarily taken aback, the fragments of the wind blade tumbled back towards him at several times their original speed. The man's expression instantly changed, and a shrill scream of pain left his lips. His body was blown into midair before he was thrown out of the screen of light and torn into pieces. His blood instantly spilled all over the place.

When Su Ming took care of his first challenger, the other lotus platforms were also silent. Blood was spilled all around the area. The souls and bodies of all the challengers had been destroyed just like that.

However, almost at the instant the lotus platforms became empty of challengers, other people took the place of the fallen.

This time, the person who appeared on Su Ming's platform was an old man. The moment he showed up, he narrowed his eyes. With one move, his figure distorted and disappeared without a trace.

Su Ming's expression remained the same. There was not a single change on his face. It did not matter to him whether the other disappeared or not. He only lifted his right leg, and once he placed it back down on the platform, a loud bang shot up. The space hundreds of thousands of feet around the lotus platform instantly froze. The old man's figure immediately appeared one thousand feet away from Su Ming's right, but he was kept in place tightly, and the pressure from the space around him pressed on him so strongly that he looked as if he had been frozen.

His face was filled with shock. When disbelief took over his expression, Su Ming turned his head around to cast a glance at him. He lifted his right hand and seized the air in his direction. The old man's body instantly charged towards Su Ming against his will. Su Ming then seized his neck, and in an aloof manner, he crushed it.

His attitude towards challengers was to kill all of them. As long as they dared challenge him, they would end up dead. He had never any fondness towards Morning Dao Sect to begin with, and since he was given a chance to kill its people in such a straightforward manner, he would naturally not be merciful.

The old man's neck shattered with a bang, and even his Nascent Divinity along with his form and soul were destroyed. He was then flung out of the screen of light.

Instantly, a third person appeared on the lotus platform which no one could see. When the man showed up, his laughter rang in the air.

"It's finally my turn. Dao Kong, it'll be better if I'm the one wearing that Flourishing Lotus." That voice belonged to a middle-aged man. He was dressed in a Constellation Robe which showed that he was a direct descendant!

All those who could wear the Constellation Robe were direct descendants in Morning Dao Sect. Even though there were tens of thousands of them, to Morning Dao Sect which controlled an entire True World, creating tens of thousands of Constellation Robes was really not much.

The number of Sacred Constellation Robes was far smaller. After all, even if people were direct descendants, there were still those who were considered superior and those who were considered inferior.

At the instant the middle-aged man appeared, Su Ming took a step forward with an aloof expression as the other's laughter echoed in the air. When the middle-aged man saw him coming over, he moved back, then raised his right hand, formed a seal, and pointed towards Su Ming.

"Manifestation of Dao!"

With those words, his whole body started withering in a bizarre fashion. He instantly looked as if he had turned into a skeleton, and a black light shot out from the tip of his finger.

At the instant it did so, it broke down and turned into countless black threads in front of Su Ming and formed a huge net which attempted to envelop him.

The black net instantly closed in, but just when it looked as if it was going to touch Su Ming, a hint of derision appeared on Su Ming's lips. He raised his right hand without hesitation, then seized the air in the direction of the light. With a bang, it came under his control.

This scene caused the middle-aged man to suck in a sharp breath. He retreated swiftly, his heart filled with shock. He had always believed that his divine ability was incredibly powerful, so even those who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm would

not dare seize it with bare hands. If they did so, the power contained within the divine ability would transform the person and steal their intelligence.

The middle-aged man had ambushed plenty of people whose levels of cultivation had been higher than his with this Art, but it was his first time seeing someone not being affected by the divine ability when they seized it with bare hands.

As his expression changed, the middle-aged man moved, intending to retreat, but when Su Ming unfurled his right hand, the black net he'd caught immediately tumbled backwards towards the middle-aged man. At the instant his expression changed again and he was about to run from the lotus platform, a shrill scream of pain rang out. When his own net enveloped him, he was reduced to a nobody. Even his Constellation Robe was torn. After all, it was just a Constellation Robe and not a Sacred Constellation Robe, which was why the defense it offered was limited.

After he killed three people in succession, Su Ming also could not find any interest within himself to look at the lotus platforms belonging to the other Dynasts. He simply stood on his own and waited for the fourth person. In an instant, they showed up.

Time passed, and the fourth... seventh... tenth person came. When half a day passed, Su Ming had already killed nearly four hundred people in the continuous stream of challenges!

He did not pay any attention to the world outside. He did not know how the other Dynasts were doing, but even he had gradually become averse to this sort of slaughter. However, he wanted to see just how many people would still dare to challenge him when he killed all of them in such a manner.

Besides, he was still waiting for a person who could truly challenge him. Only that sort of fight would allow him to battle to his heart's content. He knew that as the battles continued and the others lost their courage to join the fights, those with great levels of cultivation would gradually appear.

As a glint shone in Su Ming's eyes, another figure appeared on his platform. He only cast a glance at that person but could tell that he was just in the initial stage of World Plane Realm. This sort of cultivator made Su Ming frown.

In just the span of a breath, the figure became clear, and it was just a lanky young man. The moment he appeared, he took a few steps backwards, and an obsequious smile appeared on his face before he wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming.

"Your Highness, don't attack. Please don't attack me. I'm not here to challenge you. With your glorious image and your fame in the four Great True Worlds, how would I dare attack you? Just one breath from you, and you'll send me straight back to my mother's womb. Thus, please fulfill my request and give me the span of a few breaths,

just a few breaths." The obsequious look on the lanky young man's face looked very polished, without a hint of deceit to be detected...

Su Ming was taken aback.

The lanky young man was also wiping off cold sweat off his forehead in his head. He quickly took a few more steps back and reached the border. He pulled most of his body out of the screen of light around the lotus platform, then threw his head back to shout towards the sky in with such force that his face and neck turned red.

"Old masters, young masters, fellow Daoists from the fourth, third, and second planes, seniors, fellow sect members, brothers, sisters, uncles, aunties, hello. I have here with me high quality medicinal cores, a large number of spirit talismans, a wide assortment of blades, spears, swords, halberds, but if you want them, you'll have to be quick. The more you buy, the more free gifts you'll obtain. Remember me. I am De Shun. My De means morality, and Shun means having everything go your way when you buy things.

"I live on the 333rd continent in the third plane. All my treasures are great items from when I went out on a war expedition. I can guarantee you that they are of high quality, and you can even book them!"

Once he finished shouting those words, all the people in the area were stunned. In fact, the battles from the other lotus platforms came to a halt because of it as well. Even the old man in Life Realm looked over with anger, but at that moment, the young man ducked his body back behind the screen of light, wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming in an obsequious manner, and swiftly rushed out...

Chapter 1070 Do You Understand Now?

"Hello, everyone... my name is De Shun..."

The excited voice seemed to echo in all corners of the world. De Shun had successfully attracted all the cultivators' attention and successfully promoted the things he wanted to sell. He could already predict that his future business would definitely increase by leaps and bounds due to his performance on this day.

A person who could think of such a method was definitely not someone who was normal. They needed incredible courage and determination as well as readiness to face life-threatening danger. After all, if De Shun had made a wrong judgment, there was a high possibility that he would end up dead on the lotus platform.

That was why even Su Ming could not help but laugh after he recovered from his shock in regards to such a form of promotion which risked De Shun's own life.

Besides, he had to have quite a powerful background besides being willing to risk his own life, or else causing such a ruckus in the solemn Anointment Ceremony would definitely end up with him punished for wreaking havoc in Morning Dao Sect. If it was light, he would be sent into forced isolation, and if it was heavy, even his cultivation base might be destroyed.

De Shun was clearly not an idiot either, or else he would not have thought about such a method to promote his business. He had to have people supporting him, which was why he did not have to be too worried about provoking the seniors in Morning Dao Sect and bringing huge trouble on his head.

While standing at the center of the lotus platform, the old man in Life Realm stared with eyes burning in anger at De Shun swiftly running away and returning to his own stone platform. With a cold harrumph, he forced down his anger.

"A mere degenerate. If there is anyone else who imitates his actions, do not blame me for punishing you according to the rules of the sect!" With an imposing tone, the words of the old man in Life Realm immediately echoed in all directions.

"He wasn't punished?" The ten million cultivators in the area might have lowered their heads in an act of obedience, but they could not help but swiftly communicate with each other through their thoughts.

"You don't know about this, do you? This person called De Shun has a blood connection to Sect Master Bei Bang, the one organizing this ceremony..."

"There's such a thing? Then it means that this De Shun fellow is a direct descendant, but why would a direct descendant stay in a continent on the third plane?"

"Why else would Sect Master Bei Bang call him a degenerate? I know a little about this matter since I was living in the same continent as De Shun in the past, so I've heard about him. He has incredible potential, but he doesn't like training. He only likes making medicinal cores and spirit talismans to sell. He sneaked to the third plane and chose to stay there permanently, refusing to leave. There are plenty of other things that happened in that period of time, but I don't know the details."

The various divine thoughts caused a buzzing in everyone's heads. Even though Bei Bang knew about it, he only frowned and did not pay too much attention to it. With a sullen expression, he glared at De Shun, who was in the distance and currently busy with talking to the others in an excited manner while occasionally pulling away his outer robe to reveal a large number of medicinal cores and spirit talismans hanging on his inner robe. He then sighed in his heart.

The bald crane was in Su Ming's storage bag, but through its peculiar divine ability, it could see everything in the world outside. At that moment, it screeched excitedly in Su Ming's heart.

"Genius! This person's a genius! Su Ming, why haven't I thought of this before? Darn it all, I want to go out and be as cool as he is! Go tell the others that I'm buying crystals, a large amount of crystals!" The bald crane had clearly been stimulated by De Shun's action, and as it made a loud racket, it looked as if it wanted to rush outwards.

"What are you going to use to buy crystals?" Su Ming sent it a divine thought uttered in a flat tone, immediately stunning the bald crane. It did not speak for a long time, clearly mulling over what it should use to buy crystals.

As the bald crane was deep in thought, another figure appeared on Su Ming's platform, and the repetitious challenges began once more.

Four hundred... five hundred... six hundred. The slaughter continued on Su Ming's platform. The people who showed up were absolutely not his opponent, and even though he continued with his killing, a crease had slowly started to form between Su Ming's brows.

He had thought that there was something off previously. Based on logical reasoning, with this sort of slaughter going on, it would be unlikely for the people outside to continue charging towards him like a swarm of bees to challenge him. Yet his situation didn't change no matter how much time passed.

After a moment of thought, his lips curled up into a cold sneer. Since there were so many people coming to die, they should not blame Su Ming for being ruthless and merciless.

Those outside could not see the slaughter on the lotus platforms, but as time passed, all the challengers who went to Su Ming's platform died, and this was enough to shock all those outside.

As the end to the challenges of the first day came close to the end, most of the near ten million cultivators in the world outside cast their gazes on Su Ming's lotus platform. Compared to the others, Su Ming's platform was drenched in blood and filled with a crimson light. In the clouds and fog which appeared above his platform were two runic symbols which were currently shining.

One of them symbolized the number of challengers, and the other blood red one showed the number of deaths that had occurred on that platform.

The blood-red runic symbol revealed that the number of deaths had surpassed one thousand!

The battles on other lotus platforms were clearly not as intense as on that of Su Ming. At most, they only had four hundred something deaths. The ones who had the least... were the aloof young man and the sickly pale middle-aged man with the gentle face.

The two of them had sat on their platforms throughout the day, but no one had challenged them.

Because of that, their platforms became incredibly distinct among the others, and only Su Ming's was as radiant as theirs. The first two attracted attention because no one dared to challenge them, and the other was because of the heinous slaughter. Besides that person called De Shun, all those who had dared to challenge Su Ming had died.

Sometimes, a person's reputation was built through slaughter, such as with Su Ming. There was a grim look in the eyes of the cultivators in the area as they stared at his platform.

Killing more than one thousand cultivators could only be done with a certain amount of power, but even more importantly, Su Ming had not once activated the Flourishing Lotus on his robe to absorb life force so that he could recover his strength.

Compared to the other Dynasts who had been challenged throughout the day, besides the aloof young man and the gentle middle-aged man, all the others had restored their cultivation bases at least once. Some even several times.

However, even so, the judgments could not be made easily, since all lotus platforms were shielded by a screen of light. No one could tell what was going on inside, so they did not know whether there had been powerful warriors among the challengers.

Yet no matter what, the shock brought by the fact of someone being able to kill more than one thousand cultivators in a day was like a mighty pressure that gradually enveloped the hearts of all those in the area.

When the first day of challenges ended and the screens of light from the lotus platforms disappeared, the figures of all ten Dynasts were revealed. Su Ming's expression was dark. Over the course of the day, he had grown annoyed by all the slaughter. What he wanted was to fight against a true powerful warrior, not partake in such meaningless slaughter.

Su Ming's questions had also grown. Through the battles over the course of the day, especially the hundreds of people in the latter half, quite a large number of them had been taken aback when they saw him before they attacked.

He would have passed it off as insignificant if it was just one person, but when hundreds of people did the same thing, Su Ming was forced to think more on it.

It was clear that those cultivators had not come to challenge him, but for some unknown reason, they had been sent to his platform.

"The challenges for the first day are over, but us cultivators do not need long to rest. Two hours later, the challenges will continue," Bei Bang said flatly after sweeping his gaze across Su Ming and the others.

No one raised any opposition to his words. A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes, then for the first time during the Anointment Ceremony, right in front of ten million cultivators, his calm voice rose into the air.

"I have a question." His voice echoed in the air. When it traveled in all directions, he immediately attracted the gazes from all the cultivators around him. Even the other nine Dynasts cast their gazes towards him.

When they looked at him, most of the Dynasts had calm expressions on their faces, so no one could tell what they felt at that moment.

"Speak," Bei Bang commanded flatly. A light shone in the eyes of the tanned old man who stood among the three Sect Masters behind him, and he started laughing coldly in his heart.

"There were clearly quite a large number of people who did not intend to challenge me today among my challengers, so why were they sent to my platform?" Su Ming asked slowly while staring at the old man in Life Realm.

When his words were heard by the crowd, the ten million cultivators in the area were stunned before some of them soon seemed to have understood what was going on. They immediately chuckled, and when that noise fused together, it turned into loud laughter that echoed among the cultivators.

It was rather grating to the ears, as if the whole world was laughing at Su Ming for his ignorance.

In fact, even the tanned old man began laughing. Besides the aloof young man and the gentle middle-aged man among the other Dynasts, the remaining seven also laughed, and there was a hint of derision in their laughter.

"How many lands and stages have you cleared in the Striking Lands?" Bei Bang frowned and looked towards Su Ming amid the laughter emitted by the ten million people around him.

Su Ming frowned as well.

"I remember this. Dao Kong, you only went to the first land and cleared the sixth stage in the Striking Lands," a young man with long hair and long, narrow eyes said with a laugh. He was one of the Dynasts.

"You're wrong. It's not the sixth stage anymore. Dynast Dao Kong has not returned for a thousand-odd years, so his rank has automatically been reduced. I remember taking a glance at it three months ago. He has already been reduced to the first stage," a middle-aged man with a distinct birthmark on his neck said with a hint of a smile on his lips. He was clearly another Dynast since he stood beside the young man with the long, narrow eyes.

"Great Sect Master Bei Bang, you do not need to trouble yourself to make explanations for this. I can provide answers for your question, Dao Kong. Your rank in the Striking Lands is too low while all of us have already cleared the first Striking Lands a long time ago. In fact, Dao Lin and Dao Fa are powerful warriors who have cleared the second Striking Lands. There are also far too many people among our fellow Daoists around us whose rank surpasses yours. That's why even if they challenge us, they are sent to your platform because their rank in the Striking Lands is not high enough," another young man who was a Dynast by the side said with a laugh.

Bei Bang cast Su Ming a glance, then asked flatly in an unconcerned manner, "Do you understand now?"

As everyone spoke, the ten million people's laughter grew louder and even more grating to the ears, causing the faces of direct descendants and the disciples from the other races who were good friends with Dao Kong to turn incredibly sour.

Chapter 1071 I Understand Now!

The thin Ma Fei shrank a little while she stood in the crowd and felt a cold chill on her back. She admitted that she had intentionally not told Su Ming the secret about the Striking Lands because she wanted to see him make a fool of himself. After all, she was incredibly unsatisfied with the fact that her Master had placed her beside Su Ming, preventing her from going on trips to the third plane with her friends.

And Xu Hui's words had also made indignation rise within her, which was why she had hidden it. However, she did not expect that Su Ming would possess the golden bloodline, and that even the three Sect Masters would have to bow to him.

While in a state of nervousness, she followed Su Ming back to the continent, totally forgetting to mention the matter about the Striking Lands.

The grating laughter from the crowd continued to echo in the air. Since a rare chance for them to mock a Dynast had arrived, the people naturally did not let it pass. Their laughter grew louder and louder, and they were used it to express the jealousy and envy in their hearts.

As for Su Ming, he remained composed and not a hint of change could be detected on his face. When he heard Bei Bang and the other Dynasts' explanation, he nodded in an indifferent manner.

However, those who knew Su Ming would definitely feel a chill in their hearts if they saw it, because Su Ming had never been a magnanimous person. He was vengeful, and being temperamental was the best manifestation of his character.

Su Ming had naturally seen the scorn from the other Dynasts and the disregard from the old man in Life Realm, and he put it to memory. Similarly, he also took note of the people who laughed the loudest and most joyfully in the crowd.

"I see, so that's how it is. Very well. I have two hours of rest, yes? Allow me to take my leave first." Su Ming nodded, then lifted his foot and left into the distance amid the laughter around him.

"Could it be that he felt a little embarrassed here, that's why he left in a hurry?"

"It must be. This Dynast Dao Kong might look bright, but he actually asked such a stupid question. He was definitely asking to be mocked."

"He might have been so angered that he went to the first Striking Lands to return to his previous rank. This person could kill more than a thousand challengers without stop, so he naturally has ability. He might be able to succeed."

"Succeed? He only has two hours. Unless he is a powerful warrior in Solar Kalpa Realm, he will at most be able to clear the fifth stage. He won't be able to reach his previous result—the sixth stage."

The ten million people's words and laughter was still echoing in the air, but at that moment, someone suddenly let out a cry of surprise.

"He really went to the first Striking Lands! He's... so fast. This speed..." As that cry of surprise reverberated in the air, the crowd looked over. They saw a long arc travelling so fast it could slice apart the air. With a speed that could not be seen clearly with the naked eye and a loud bang that shook the sky and earth, it rushed to the first among the nine Striking Lands in the first plane.

"This speed... what level of cultivation does he possess?"

"Perhaps he is only fast. After all, how many stages could he possibly clear in two hours?" The Dynasts who had mocked Su Ming previously on the lotus platforms immediately cast each other a glance.

However, almost the moment they sent their divine thoughts to each other and the ten million cultivators cast their gazes towards the first Striking Lands, the long arc which

was Su Ming had already landed in the first Striking Land. At that moment, a loud bang shook the world and caused the air to tremble.

BANG!

The sound was so loud that the hearts of all ten million people trembled. Their expressions changed drastically, for they knew that there was only one explanation to that sound coming from the first plane, right from the first Striking Lands!

It was... the sound of the rockslide crashing down from the first stage and the sound of someone successfully clearing it.

"Even if we need to begin from the start every single time we challenge the Striking Lands... what is the fastest speed for someone to clear the first stage? I remember it was seven breaths! How many breaths did he use?"

"How could he be so fast? How did... How did he go through it?!" As the ten million people's expressions changed, the Dynasts only laughed coldly. Some of them might have also been surprised, but they were not too shocked. After all, this was just the first stage. Any one of them could easily clear it.

But the instant they laughed coldly...

BOOM!

BOOM!

Two loud bangs that shook the sky and earth reverberated in the world from the first Striking Lands. The wave of sound that was formed turned into a wave of ripples that swept through the area as if a violent gust of wind had been stirred up.

At that moment, more people sported even changes in their expressions. Even the expressions of the Dynasts who had been previously mocking grew grave.

However, before the people in the area had time to think and cause an uproar, three loud, shocking bangs suddenly rose into the air again. They sounded as if they were connected to the previous two. When their combination shook the world, the Dynasts who had previously mocked Su Ming were finally shocked as well.

"What... What is this speed?!"

"Impossible! This is the third stage! Even the person who cleared the third stage at a record time used up the span of nearly twenty breaths!"

A commotion broke out. Quite a large number of people among the ten million cultivators in the area stood up, and with astonishment looked towards the first Striking

Lands. As their expressions changed, they looked as if they wanted to personally witness the sight of Su Ming clearing the area.

At that moment, another loud bang shook all the people's hearts. This time, based on their speculations, there had to be four bangs rising into the air, but in reality... it was not just four. It was fifteen!

Fifteen loud bangs shook the sky and earth, and when the loud rumbles made the world tremble, the cultivators felt as if the world was about to stop and as if time was about to freeze. All their thoughts came to a halt, and every single sound they heard with their ears was drowned by the noise coming from below, making it the only thing they heard.

"Fifteen bangs! How could fifteen bangs ring out at the same time?!"

"This is the fourth, fifth, and sixth stages being cleared at the same time! How could this be?!"

"Unless... Unless this person isn't going by the rules and is just clearing them with brute strength!"

The commotion took over the whole area, and the expressions of the Dynasts who had previously mocked Su Ming no longer looked like they were before. Besides the aloof young man and the gentle middle-aged man, all the others looked down with incredibly grave expressions.

Many of the ten million cultivators flew up swiftly to charge towards the first Striking Lands. They wanted to see how Su Ming did that feat from close proximity!

However, at the instant the people flew up, another fifteen bangs rose up and echoed furiously in the air. This time, even the aloof young man and the gentle middle-aged man beside him stood up to look towards the first Striking Lands. In fact, even the pupils of the old man in Life Realm shrank. The three Sect Masters all had different expressions on their faces.

The second fifteen bangs clearly represented the seventh and eighth stages being cleared instantly. While this... was not something unprecedented in Morning Dao Sect, it was still something that had not happened in over ten thousand years.

Several millions of people had flown up from the crowd. With the fastest speed they could muster, they charged towards the first Striking Lands. There was shock on their faces, along with a hint of thrill and excitement.

They were shocked by the speed at which Su Ming used to clear the stages and thrilled and excited because such an event stirred anticipation in their hearts. They were highly interested in just how many stages Dao Kong would be able to clear, since he was obviously using his actions to show how unstoppable he was.

"Could it be that there will be another person who will clear the first Striking Lands?!"

"Haha! The heavens have blessed Morning Dao Sect. There were less than one thousand people who cleared the first Striking Lands more than one thousand years ago, but in just the past one thousand years, a number of people several times the amount managed it."

When the millions of long arcs charged towards the first Striking Lands, Su Ming had his head lifted to look at the sky in the continent. He was located in a gigantic, circular platform several hundreds of thousands of feet wide. There were circles of carvings on the platform, and they resembled annual rings. At that moment, they were shining with a powerful light. Before him was the center of the circular platform, and there was a gigantic pillar of light rising into the sky from it. There were more than one thousand names written horizontally on that pillar of light, and all of them represented the people who had successfully cleared the first Striking Lands.

And there were large numbers of dragon-like beasts surrounding the pillar of light. They were all roaring at Su Ming.

But he had an indifferent look on his face. At the instant he looked over with a cold glance, a piercing glare shone in his eyes, and the dragon-like beats around the area threw their heads back and roared. Their bodies instantly turned into gigantic meteors that fell towards Su Ming with loud bangs.

There was only one falling meteor in the first stage. Right then, the falling meteors had increased to ninety-nine. When they fell down, the force with which they crashed was equivalent to a full-powered strike from a cultivator in Solar Kalpa Realm. This was equivalent to ninety-nine powerful warriors in Solar Kalpa Realm attacking at the same time. It not something that a normal person could fight against.

In truth, people were not supposed to go through the test in the first Striking Lands through brute force. They were instead supposed to be dodging and relying on their speed. Only when they had a sufficient amount of speed and dodging abilities would they be able to gauge their potential. Figuring out this potential was the main focus of the first Striking Lands.

This test could increase a cultivator's speed so that they could have a greater chance at avoiding an enemy's fatal strike. After all, there were times when they would not have enough power to face off against a powerful enemy with brute strength. At such a situation, with enough speed, they could still fight in circles against them.

A cold sneer appeared on Su Ming's lips. The instant the falling meteors formed by the ninety-nine dragon-like beasts, he lifted his right foot and stepped on the circular platform. With a loud bang, a powerful wave of impact spread out from his foot. His body shot up, and he lifted his right hand to throw a punch in the direction of the sky.

The world roared, and the shadow of a gigantic fist rose from Su Ming's body. As it roared, it charged towards the sky. All the meteors it touched instantly crumbled to pieces.

At the same time, right when all the meteors shattered, nine loud bangs that meant Su Ming had cleared the stage rang out in the air.

It was just as what the ten million cultivators had guessed, Su Ming had completely ignored the rules of the test. He had simply decided to use his strength to clear the place through brute force!

As the world roared and the cultivators in the area were in the process of going over, Su Ming had already leaped up to change to the second Striking Lands. He could choose not to take action, but when he did... then with just one move, he would shock the world!

The pillar of light on the platform behind him had a flashing name appear right on top at that moment—Dao Kong!

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1072 Striking Lands 1 - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1072 Striking Lands 1 Chapter 1072 Striking Lands 1

The nine booms shook the sky and earth. As a brilliant light surged skywards from the first Striking Lands, it shone in all directions, and all the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect on the way immediately stopped moving. When they looked towards the first Striking Lands, shock appeared in their eyes.

They were not the only ones. At that moment, the expressions of the disciples from Morning Dao Sect who had not flown out from the place where the Anointment Ceremony was held changed. The Dynasts who had the same status as Su Ming also narrowed their eyes.

Su Ming was simply too fast. Only around one hundred breaths had passed since he left to the time he cleared all nine stages in the first Striking Lands. It was a sensation due to the time he took and the difficulty that lay in that test itself. It was enough to start a storm which swept in all directions.

Even the previous indifferent expressions of the aloof young man and the gentle middle-aged man turned grave while a dark light flashed in Bei Bang's eyes while he stood on the largest lotus platform. The three Sect Masters behind him had differing expressions. A barely noticeable fierce light shone in the tanned old man's eyes.

The thin Ma Fei sucked in a sharp breath as she stood in the crowd, looking rather dumbfounded. Even though she had guessed that Su Ming would be able to clear the first Striking Lands, she had not expected that he would be able to clear them at such a speed.

De Shun, the person who had promoted himself on Su Ming's platform, was also in the crowd. At that moment, he shrank in slightly, then a thought formed in his head. Immediately, he rose up.

'I'll be rich! I'll definitely be rich this time!' An excited expression appeared on his face, and he charged towards the cultivators rushing to the first Striking Lands.

With his actions, Su Ming had crushed all of the laughter mocking him just then. With his actions, he told all the people that the Striking Lands posed no difficulty to him if he wanted to clear them.

At that moment, Su Ming took a step forward, turning into a long arc that sliced through the air. When the crowd looked at him from the distance, they saw him rushing towards the second Striking Lands.

"The second Striking Lands! He went to the second!"

"The second Striking Lands is several times harder than the first. Even if he managed to clear the previous one at an incredibly quick speed, he might not be as successful in the second land!"

"But I look forward to whether he will succeed!"

"That's impossible, the second Striking Lands tests willpower. The illusions there are so strong that a normal person will not be able to go past, or else why would only Dao Lin and Dao Fa be the only ones among the Dynasts who could clear all nine stages in the second land?!"

"That's not necessarily true. After all, there are hundreds of people who had managed to clear the nine Striking Lands. But even the fastest person used six hours... Dao Kong simply might not have enough time."

As the noise from the discussions rose, the crowd charged towards the second Striking Lands.

Besides Dao Lin and Dao Da with somewhat grave expressions on their faces, the other seven Dynasts on the lotus platforms sat with various forms of sullenness.

"He only has two hours; it's impossible for him to clear the second Striking Lands!"

"That's right. It'll be especially so for the illusion in the third stage. Even if you know it's fake, it's still difficult to prevent your will from shaking. That man... Hmph!"

As the Dynasts sent their thoughts to each other, the long arc which was Su Ming sliced through the air and stepped onto the second continent, right where were the second Striking Lands.

It had the same gigantic round platform, and there were also several dragon-like beasts surrounding a gigantic pillar of light. At the instant Su Ming came to the place, those dragon-like beasts immediately roared at him.

At the instant their voices echoed in the air, Su Ming stepped onto the round platform without any hesitation.

An imposing voice immediately spoke from the pillar of light.

"Challenger... your name." There was not a hint of emotion in that voice. It echoed in the area and reached the hearts of all the cultivators who were rushing over at their top speed.

"Dao Kong," Su Ming answered flatly. At the instant his voice rang out, a gentle light spread out from of the pillar of light. It enveloped Su Ming's body, and when it spread past him, the emotionless voice echoed in the air in the same imposing manner again.

"Dao Kong, the second Striking Lands, the Stage of Illusions, will henceforth be activated."

When it finished speaking, the world before Su Ming's eyes changed and turned into emptiness. The darkness there was endless. Strange roars came nonstop from somewhere farther away.

'Stage of Illusions...'

A cold sneer appeared at the corners of Su Ming's mouth. Perhaps such illusions would affect the others, but Su Ming had the Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon in his eyes. His own illusions contained the power of the illusion which would turn everything fake into real as long as he believed it. Using an illusion to test Su Ming was akin to a cultivator in Foundation Establishment Realm testing a cultivator in Nascent Soul Realm.

To Su Ming, the most energy-saving method would be to sit down cross-legged and allow the illusions around him to change, become more vicious, stronger, and as he remained unshaken, they would break.

However, this method was not arrogant enough, not ostentatious enough, and it was not what Su Ming wanted.

The shadow of the sun, moon, and stars flashed in his eyes, and his lips curled up into a cold sneer. He wanted to use a method no one else could use to clear the second Striking Lands.

This unprecedented method was not of the illusions in this place testing Su Ming, but him using his illusions... to test the land!

Illusion versus illusion. He would see whose control and skills over illusions was greater.

When Su Ming stepped into the second Striking Lands, there were already millions of long arcs who had arrived at the sky beyond that continent. They surrounded the area and looked at the Striking Lands.

De Shun's eyes shone as he stood among the cultivators. He swept his right hand across his bosom, and a spirit talisman shining with a blue light appeared on his palm. He stuck it to his neck, then threw his head back to roar.

"Old masters, young masters, brothers, sisters, fellow Daoists, do you remember De Shun? My De means morality, and Shun means having everything go your way when you buy things.

"Today, on this land, I will open a betting pool to bet on how many breaths Dynast Dao Kong will need to clear five stages. If you bet that he will clear it within fifty breaths, your return rate will be one hundred times, if within one hundred breaths, your return rate will be fifty times, within two hundred breaths, your return rate will be ten, and if you bet that he will clear it in more than two hundred breaths, your return rate will be one!"

Under the effect of the spirit talisman, De Shun's voice immediately echoed in the air in a thunderous manner. Everyone within the area could hear it.

It was clear that his spirit talisman was not an ordinary object, since it was able to achieve such an effect. The price for its creation should have been great, but if De Shun could grasp the right timing, he could earn back several times, several dozens of times, or even hundreds of times the money he lost. When faced with the possibility of such returns, there was no way he would let this chance go.

The millions of cultivators in the area turned their heads towards him, and someone immediately believed in his words and walked towards De Shun to place a bet.

"Why are we only betting for five stages?" There were also those who were suspicious of De Shun's words.

"Fellow Daoist, we can open another betting pool after five stages. We don't have to be in a hurry. Besides, Dynast Dao Kong might not be able to clear the first five stages. At that time, I will reimburse all those who bet on the final option. This is a rare chance so

what are you waiting for? You only need a few crystals, and if you make the right judgment, then with one crystal, you will earn one hundred crystals!

"You can earn fifty crystals, or twenty crystals, and at the very least another crystal. Make your bets! My fellow friends, make your bets! Time is almost up! The fifty breaths lot is almost closed, but I'll still take those for one hundred breaths." De Shun spoke rapidly and shouted continuously.

The commotion from the world outside could not reach the Striking Lands. At that moment, Su Ming's eyes sparkled, and the shadow of the sun, moon, and stars manifested in his eyes. Everything around him was dark while strange roars came from all directions. They sounded closer, as if there were plenty of malicious spirits charging towards him.

Su Ming let out a cold harrumph. The sun, moon, and stars shone powerfully in his eyes. Immediately, they reflected Su Ming's will in the form of pictures, and a layer of golden light spread out from his body. That golden light swept through the area, changing the space around Su Ming from darkness to another world.

Beneath his feet was ground, and above his head was a sky. Beyond the continent was empty, black space, and the land upon which Su Ming sat down was spreading outwards swiftly, as if it was replacing the emptiness in the land, since he was the dictator of the illusions in the land.

The light was created by illusions, and the dark spaces in the area were also created by them. This was a battle of illusions. Those from the Striking Lands contained a power that could shake willpower, but Su Ming's illusion not only contained this power, but also... the Art from the Ancestral Spirits in Divine Essence Star Ocean—the power that would become reality as long as he believed in it.

Because of it, the superior one was immediately decided. Almost at the instant Su Ming's world of light swept outwards, the black space dissipated layer by layer to reveal countless ferocious malicious spirits. They let out shrill screams of pain and tumbled backwards.

In an instant, the world before Su Ming no longer had any darkness in it. Light stretched to one hundred thousand feet around him.

"The first stage has been cleared. Activate the second stage." When the aloof voice rang in the air again, the scene around Su Ming changed once again.

This time, what appeared was a blue sea. Some mountains could be seen far in the distance. Together with the sea they formed a familiar scene from Su Ming's memories.

"An Art to bring out my memories, then manifest all that is familiar to me. You... are not as familiar as I am with this Art."

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He raised his right hand, then swung it forward. As the sun and moon formed in his eyes, the sea instantly tumbled about. Waves surged upwards and roared. Bolts of lightning flashed with thunderous roars. When they descended, they looked as if they separated the world, tearing the sea and the mountains in the distance apart with one loud bang!

As the whole world shattered and crumbled into fragments that tumbled backwards, what appeared after was a galaxy. Floating in it was a dull, lustreless planet. It looked as if it was dead, without a single hint of vitality that could be detected.

Chapter 1073 Striking Lands 2

There was no life force in the planet. It was like a huge meteor, dreary and dull.

After a moment, a group of cultivators approached it from a distant galaxy. There were eight of them, and they were charging forward as if they were about to come rest there, but the instant they stepped onto the dull planet, it turned into a gigantic heart. It pumped a few times, and when the cultivators screamed shrilly in pain, their bodies instantly shattered due to the beating of the heart. Their souls were immediately sucked by it.

Then, the bloody heart turned back into a dull planet.

Su Ming was in the distance. He had watched the whole scene, and a cold smile appeared on his lips. All of it was an illusion, but it belonged to Su Ming, not the Striking Lands.

The illusion was born from a memory, but not his... The memory belonged to the strange power which had created the illusion and which lay at the core of the Striking Lands of Morning Dao Sect.

Su Ming cast a cold glance towards the place, then raised his right hand to swing it forward. Immediately, hundreds of cultivators charged forward. Fear was on their faces, because there were around one thousand people hot on their heels.

Both their expressions and their actions looked incredibly real, so not a hint of falsehood could be detected. The people were so fast that they instantly closed in on the dull meteor. After a moment, screams of pain rang out, and even the thousands of people chasing after them were crushed while their Nascent Divinities were absorbed by the planet which had turned into a heart.

"Based on my understanding, the pinnacle of illusions is not to pass falsehood as the truth..." Su Ming said softly. He swung his right arm again, and the power of time surged forth, making the time flow without any sign or sound. In no time, ten thousand

years seemed to pass. Then, gradually, an army made of tens of thousands of cultivators appeared in the area. They rushed forward, looking like they wanted to pass by the planet.

The sound of a heart beating, cries of surprise, and shrill screams of pain rose into the galaxy once more. The tens of thousands of cultivators... all died, and the dull planet became a size bigger.

"It is neither turning something false real..." Su Ming shook his head. He swung his right arm again. As time flowed, all groups and individuals who passed by the planet, no matter what level of cultivation they possessed or what life form they happened to be... were all devoured by the planet.

It grew larger with each feeding. In the end, it was ten times larger than its original size.

One day, a figure appeared in the galaxy. He was a man with long hair who was dressed in a simple long robe and who had a complicated runic symbol flashing at the center of his brows. He was walking towards the planet from the distance.

"I didn't expect myself to be able to see an Illusory Meteor in this place. By the looks of it, it has already developed its own intelligence. It can be used to strengthen my disciples' willpower in the future." The man smiled faintly. His voice was gentle, but the instant his words were spoken the gigantic planet turned into a blood-red heart and began beating.

All of it were the planet's memories. When it turned into a blood red heart and the sound of it beating rose into the galaxy, a glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and he lifted his right hand to point at the space before him.

During that instant, the galaxy became still. The blood-red heart no longer continued beating, and even the gentle man stopped moving.

"From what I understand, the pinnacle of Illusory Arts... is to change memories!" Su Ming said calmly while walking towards the galaxy. When he arrived before the man in the long robe, he lifted his right hand and swung his arm at him. Immediately, as if he had wiped off something from a person's memories, that long-haired man was completely wiped off from the place.

Su Ming turned his head around. When he looked towards the blood-red heart which was the planet, the shadow of the sun, moon, and stars shone in his eyes. The freezing of time around him was instantly cancelled, and everything returned to normal. The sound of the heart beating rang in all directions once more.

That heartbeat had a strange power that could make a person's blood flow in reverse, but Su Ming's expression remained the same. He walked towards the blood-red heart,

then raised his right hand to swiftly seize the air in its direction. Booming sounds shook the sky and earth before they echoed through the whole galaxy.

"In your memories, you were subjugated by that long-haired man and became the source of power for the second Striking Lands of Morning Dao Sect. Now, your memories will be changed, and the one who will subjugate you will be me!" Su Ming formed a seal with his left hand before he pointed at the galaxy. Immediately, it trembled. A gigantic palm appeared out of nowhere and charged towards the blood-red heart.

Su Ming did not stop walking. With a single move, he seized space with his right hand. Immediately, the Life Inequity Spear appeared in his grasp. When he flung it forward, the spear let out a loud, buzzing sound, and instantly pierced the blood-red heart.

The heartbeats from the blood-red heart continued to shake the galaxy, but Su Ming did not stop. With a step forward, he stepped on that blood-red heart.

"In your memories, you are bound to fail. So this is a disaster you cannot escape..." Su Ming said faintly. He lifted his right hand, then with all five of his fingers, he stabbed the blood-red heart beneath him. At the same time, a large number of branches crawled out of his fingers and pierced his target. "But now, the one who will subjugate you is me. From now on, I am your master."

The instant Su Ming said those words, a large number of veins appeared on the blood-red heart. They twisted and squirmed about, because the branches stretching out from Su Ming's body had filled its whole body.

A loud bang signaling the collapse of the galaxy rose swiftly into space. The galaxy shattered into fragments and disappeared. The blood-red heart and Su Ming vanished with it as well.

Su Ming sat on the circular platform. He had not moved a single inch from the start. Everything before had been just an illusion. It was activated by the land, but dominated by Su Ming.

When he opened his eyes, the pillar of light in front of him started flashing intensely. The names of the hundreds of people who had cleared the area were gradually becoming fainter.

"Greetings... master." A cold voice that contained not a hint of emotion echoed in the area and Su Ming's ears.

He laughed. Once he stood up, he turned around and took a step outside. In an instant, he walked out of the platform in the land. When he appeared in midair, the pillar of light on the platform behind him showed Dao Kong's name at its highest spot, above the hundreds of other names.

And his name was not as dull as the other names. It was a brilliant shade of red!

That blood-red name not only signified that Su Ming was the fastest person to ever clear that place, but also that he was the master of the second Striking Lands.

However, that was something that other people would not know. Only Su Ming would know about it, and if he wanted, he could even make the disciples from Morning Dao Sect coming to clear the second Striking Lands die there.

More accurately speaking, Su Ming did not clear the place, because he did not clear the stages step by step based on the rules. Instead, he used a forceful method to become the master of the rules. Needless to say, because of it, he had risen above everyone. When he walked out, all the hundreds of cultivators in the area were so shocked they were flabbergasted.

While Su Ming thought that he had spent a long period of time to clear the zone, he had in truth spent much less time in the second Striking Lands compared to the first. He had only used... thirty-five breaths!

The people around the area had counted since when Su Ming had stepped into the second Striking Lands. In fact, before De Shun could amass a large number of betters after he opened his betting pool, it had already ended.

Su Ming cast a cold glance at the millions of cultivators around him, then with one move, charged towards the third Striking Lands.

Only after he left did the people in the land react to the situation. An uproar much stronger than before rose up with loud rumbling sounds, as if a storm had broken out among them.

"Thirty-five breaths? It's really just thirty-five breaths! He's too powerful. Dynast Dao Kong is too powerful!"

"I remember now! Dynast Dao Kong is said to be the person with the greatest potential in Morning Dao Sect in years! Even if he's been silent for more than a thousand years, a person like him would definitely shock the world once he appears!!"

"Just what level of cultivation does he have? How could he do this? It's only been a few moments since he entered... and he already cleared the second Striking Lands. That is the Stage of Illusions. There are only hundreds of people who have cleared the place..."

"Look. He's... he's going to clear the third Striking Lands. I'm willing to bet that he wants to clear all nine Striking Lands!"

In the mid of the uproar and disbelief, the millions of cultivators followed after Su Ming at the fastest speed they could muster and charged towards the third Striking Lands on the third continent.

Ma Fei's breathing quickened as she stood with the crowd, watching Su Ming heading off into the distance. The shock on her face was a reflection of the fluctuation of emotions in her heart, which would become something that she would not forget in her life.

De Shun might have also been incredibly astonished, but his heart was aching greatly as well at the thought of how he had miscalculated. He did not expect that Dao Kong would be so terrifying and manage to finish so quickly, preventing him from earning even more. But when he thought about it from another angle, he swiftly came to a decision. He could open another betting pool, but he'll have to do it sooner.

"The betting pool is now open! Let's continue betting. This time, it's the third Striking Lands. Everyone, you'll have to hurry."

The instant Su Ming cleared the second Striking Lands, the couple million cultivators who had not followed after the crowd and were left behind in the spot of the Anointment Ceremony could no longer remain calm. With disbelief on their faces, they flew out and without any hesitation headed towards the third continent.

Even the Dynasts found themselves unable to continue staying behind. With sour expressions, all of them turned into long arcs and charged forward. Even Dao Lin and Dao Fa had grave expressions which had never appeared on them before as they rushed ahead at full speed.

The originally lively spot used for the Anointment Ceremony only had four people left in the area. Besides Bei Bang, the others were the three Sect Masters behind him.

Chapter 1074 Striking Lands 3

The four people's faces were calm, and not many changes could be detected on them. However, they had all directed their gazes towards the long arc traveling into the distance—the long arc that was Su Ming.

The tanned old man remained composed, but he was laughing coldly in his heart. He hoped that Su Ming would be as ostentatious as possible, because when the person he had sent to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence returned, the effect would be greater.

He might have the golden light from his blood and it might not be possible to shake his status, but what the tanned old man wanted was to shake human hearts.

As long as the disciples of Morning Dao Sect heard about everything that had happened to Dao Kong in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and grew suspicious of him, the tanned old man would have reached his goal.

He only needed the disciples in Morning Dao Sect to suspect Dao Kong, for suspicions would naturally cause more rumors to be born. Because of it, even if he became a Dynast, as long as there were people who suspected him, it would be no different from him not being made a Dynast.

There was no need to render a person useless by stripping them off their status. The best weapons were the doubts in human hearts and malicious gossip.

As the tanned old man laughed coldly in his heart, Su Ming approached the third Striking Lands in the sky. As he closed in, he saw the platform at the center of the continent at first glance. There were less than thirty names shining on the pillar of light.

There were eight names at the highest part, while the other names were slightly smaller. They were placed lower. The eight names signified the people who had cleared the land, and as for the smaller names, they symbolized the people who had cleared certain stages.

Su Ming stared at the pillar of light. As whistling sounds reached his ears. They came from all ten million cultivators charging towards him as they sliced through the air with their speed.

He did not bother himself with the fact that he'd drawn a crowd. Su Ming lifted his foot and stepped onto the platform. At the instant he did so, a gigantic figure made of light appeared before him.

It might be vague, but based on the outline, it was a man dressed in golden armor. He had a golden helmet, and his armor was shining with golden light. His arms were positioned before him, pressing on a gigantic golden sword which was stabbed into the ground.

His eyes were closed. When his body slowly became clearer and his complete appearance was revealed, he opened his eyes, and a brilliant light shone from within them.

At that moment, the cultivators arrived one after another in the area nearby. The people who arrived the quickest had solemn expressions on their faces. The power exuding from their bodies showed that all of them were not weak; quite a large number of them were cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm.

"The third Striking Lands is definitely not like the previous two lands. All eight of the people who had cleared it might not have been appointed as Dynasts, but all of them had attained great completion in Solar Kalpa Realm. In fact, there are people who

suspect that they had broken through the limitation of their Realm and become Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death!"

"They might not be Dynasts, but even the ten Dynasts have to be polite when they meet these people to win their support. That Dynast Dao Kong might have the ability to clear the previous two Striking Lands, but he probably won't be successful in the third Striking Land."

"That's right. After all, even Dao Lin and Dao Fa were forced to stop when they reached the ninth stage. No matter how strong this Dao Kong is, he will be forced to stop here."

"Indeed. Those eight are all people who have built quite a reputation for themselves. Perhaps they don't even find the title of Dynasts worthy of them, which is why they did not come to the challenge this time. In fact, there are also direct descendants in Morning Dao Sect who have great power, but are still in isolation. They have completely disregarded this Anointment Ceremony."

"That's because these ten Dynasts are not strong enough, or else why do you think there were no powerful warriors who came to challenge them?"

As the crowd discussed among itself, it suddenly stopped talking and looked towards the platform.

At that moment, the man in golden armor before Su Ming had completely opened his eyes. Two bolts of lightning swam in them as the man stared at Su Ming coldly.

"This land is known as the Striking Land of the Battle of the Golden Armor. I am the garrison, Jin Xiu, and due to the protection bestowed upon me by Morning Dao Sect, I am to train the disciples of the sect in battle. There are nine stages, and I will release one-tenth to nine-tenths of mine cultivation base to battle thee according to the stage thou shalt challenge. If thou art able to square off against me from the first stage to the ninth without stop, then thou wouldst earneth the right to challenge me at full strength," the old man in golden armor said in a booming voice, but no one in the area outside could hear it. Only Su Ming alone could hear his words.

When he finished, the man in golden light took a step forward. He wrapped his fingers around the golden sword with his right hand, and as he moved forward, he lifted it with his right hand in a simple movement upwards before swinging it down.

With that action, the power which erupted from him was only at the middle stage of World Plane Realm. It might have seemed ordinary, but when it landed in Su Ming's eyes, he found that the golden sword's slash contained a will to cut through laws!

This discovery made Su Ming swiftly stop himself from taking a step forward and move back instead. He gave up on attacking and just stared at the incoming slash while he retreated. His eyes flashed as he did that.

The slash sliced through the air and descended on Su Ming in an instant. He had a vague feeling that the laws around him had changed during that instant to form an invisible ripple that charged towards the old man from all directions. It fused into the sword and slashed down along with it.

'This is... the power to cut the laws of fate!'

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. If he had not come to understand the Execution of Three Evils, he would definitely not have been able to see the strange power contained in the man in golden armor's slash.

Boom!

The golden sword cut down swiftly. Su Ming had clearly retreated, but when he was about to avoid the attack to observe it carefully, he discovered that at the instant the sword swung down, the dimension around him had changed. It was as if the space in which he was had moved to appear under the sword all on its own!

Su Ming could not dodge it!

'This isn't just a slash containing the power to cut fate. The power that spread out to change the laws just now changed the dimension around me as well as my location so that the sword... would definitely hit me!

'Jin Xiu, what a man!'

For the first time, fighting spirit rose in Su Ming's eyes. It was the first time he became so excited ever since he had come to Morning Dao Sect. It did not matter whether it was the challenges just then, the Rockside Wastelands, or even becoming the master of the Stage of Illusions—none of them had been capable of making Su Ming feel such a powerful desire to fight.

Only at that moment did it raise within him and result in a brilliant light in his eyes. He did not choose to retreat any longer, but instead lifted his right hand to hurl a punch towards the incoming slash.

Loud bangs echoed in the air, and the golden sword distorted. When it touched Su Ming's fist, it dissipated, but a wave of tremors surged into his hand and surged through his whole body repeatedly, making him sway. Even though he did not retreat, his Qi and blood tumbled about. This caused the will to fight become stronger in his eyes, and at the same time, a determined glare appeared in them.

'What is this divine ability?!' Su Ming sucked in a deep breath, and his determination became stronger. After all, his physical body was strong enough to shock an Almighty in Mastery Realm, but his Qi and blood had went wild from one single slash containing the

power of the middle stage of World Plane Realm. Before it, Su Ming had never thought such a thing was possible.

'There's no way a cultivator in the middle stage of World Plane Realm could win against this slash. Even those in the later stage of World Plane Realm would find it hard to fight against it. A cultivator who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm would be able to withstand the strike, albeit with great difficulty. The final tremor would definitely hurt them.

'No wonder... No wonder there are only thirty-something names in this place, and only eight people have managed to pass. Those eight people must have incredibly great power.

"A sword attack with three styles... This is the might of this sword, but if that's the case, could it be that there are divine abilities hidden in the nine Striking Lands... If that's true, then what is hidden in the first and second Striking Lands? It's a pity I didn't notice it sooner.' A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes, and he raised his head slightly before the man in golden armor.

"I shall now use two-tenths of my power."

The instant the man in golden armor spoke, he took a step forward. This time, he remained in his previous posture. The golden light in his right hand began to shine, and when the golden sword appeared again, he swung at Su Ming.

The power which erupted from him was no longer in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, but the later stage. In fact, a piercing golden light surrounded the golden sword. The sound of air being sliced apart reverberated around it. The man used the same sword style, but in Su Ming's eyes, it was much swifter and fiercer than before.

Su Ming's eyes sparkled fiercely. He remembered the trajectory of the man's sword as it swung down, and when it was about to fall on his head, he lifted his right hand to swing it before himself.

After a bang, Su Ming moved again. His Qi and blood began to surges about even more furiously. Even though it went away in an instant, this sort of a powerful divine ability still made the determination in Su Ming's eyes become even greater.

"Again!" Su Ming laughed loudly, then took a step forward.

A barely noticeable glint shone in the eyes of the man with the golden armor. He nodded, and when he raised his right hand, he used the same sword style, the same action, but this time, he used the power of those who had already attained great completion in World Plane Realm in his attack.

A loud bang rose into the air, and Su Ming actually took half a step back! When he raised his head, he could vaguely see a golden sword that seemed as if it was about to manifest.

"Again!"

A solemn look appeared in the eyes of the man in golden armor. He raised his right hand and struck the center of his brows, and cracking sounds came from his body. Immediately, the ripples of power which belonged to those in Lunar Kalpa Realm burst out from his body. A golden moon appeared behind him, and the golden light surged into the sky from the sword in his hand.

"This is me using four-tenths of mine power. Observe carefully."

The man in golden armor moved. It was still the same sword trajectory, but the instant it landed, Su Ming had a strong feeling that the sword seemed to have shuddered in midair. When it did so, the sharpness of the sword immediately grew by leaps and bounds.

The slash landed, and booming sounds surged into the air. This time, Su Ming took a step backwards, but the man in golden armor also trembled. He took a step back. When he lifted his head, a hint of astonishment could be seen on his face.

"Dost thou understand?"

"I'm still a little off." The image of a golden sword had already manifested in Su Ming's eyes, and it was flashing rapidly.

Su Ming, determined to learn the sword attack, did not know that an uproar which surged into the skies had erupted in the area beyond when the ten million cultivators saw him battle against the man in golden armor. Even the expressions of cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm and Dynasts changed drastically.

Chapter 1075 Striking Lands 4

"He's not defending! He's actually attacking!"

"All the others who challenged the Golden Armor Platform mostly prioritized defense. After all, the sword attack from the man in the golden armor is incredibly powerful, and it far surpasses the power which he shows."

"This is not the main focus. The main point is... Dynast Dao Kong actually made Jin Xiu take a step back! I wonder if you met him before, but over the years, I've never seen anyone who actually managed to force Jin Xiu back."

"I've seen someone do it before, but the power needed is at the very least in Solar Kalpa Realm!"

As the people in the area fell into discussions, the Dynasts who had come to the area looked over with dark expressions. Hints of shock were in their eyes, and even Dao Lin as well as Dao Fa were solemn.

"He's at the fifth stage now," Dynast Dao Lin, the young man with the aloof expression, said in a cold voice at that moment.

"One of them has only released four-tenths of his power, and the other is fighting at full strength. There's nothing worth any shock," said Dao Fa, the gentle man who was also a Dynast and who was standing beside Dao Lin, faintly when he heard those words.

On the platform, Su Ming lifted his head and stared at the man in golden armor before him. The image of the golden sword shone in his eyes. He had been able to make the man take a step back in the previous exchange because he had understood the power causing the rebound in that sword attack.

That power could make all people's Qi and blood surge. If they could not withstand it, their Qi and blood would disintegrate, and they would die. But even if they could withstand it, the surging of their Qi and blood could still make their bodies numb.

"Thou hast cleareth the fourth stage. I wilt now release five-tenths of mine power." As the man in golden armor spoke languidly, golden light shone in his eyes. The power of those in Lunar Kalpa Realm erupted from his body. His presence was so strong that it instantly formed a mighty pressure that spread through the area.

At the instant that presence of Lunar Kalpa Realm appeared, it erupted again. It was a power that was just a sliver away from Solar Kalpa Realm. Compared to the power the man had exuded when he was in the fourth stage, the difference was incredibly great, even though they were both in the same Realm.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes as the man in golden armor lifted his right hand. It was still the same movement, and he still took a step forward. With a presence that seemed like it wanted to split apart space, the golden sword swiftly swung down on Su Ming.

He took a step forward and did not dodge. When he raised his right hand, he positioned two of his fingers together to form a sword, then swung it from the ground to the sky. An invisible sword seemed to have formed in his hand, and with an upwards motion, it crashed against the incoming golden sword.

Booming sounds reverberated in all directions. This time, Su Ming shuddered and staggered three steps backwards. The man in golden armor also shuddered and took

five steps backwards. He stabbed the golden sword into the ground to stop himself and drew a long line in the land.

A smile appeared on Su Ming's lips. The fighting spirit in his eyes had been ignited, and it was burning with bright flames. As he smiled, he stared at the man in golden armor. There seemed to be a golden sword manifesting and being crushed in the flames of his eyes, then manifesting again. This process repeated as if he was deducing the structure of the divine ability.

"Again!"

Su Ming moved forward. When he took the initiative to attack, the man in golden armor lifted the golden sword swiftly. A power which belonged to those in Solar Kalpa Realm erupted from his body. This was six-tenths of his power, and also the sixth stage of the land.

The power of Solar Kalpa Realm which erupted from his body gathered on the golden sword in his hand, and the presence spreading out from his body was strong enough to threaten those who had attained full completion in Solar Kalpa Realm. At the instant Su Ming closed in, the man in golden armor let out a low growl at the sky before charging forward as well. He swept his sword sideways, instantly stirring up a violent gust of wind that rushed towards Su Ming.

It lasted only the blink of an eye. Su Ming formed a sword with two of his fingers on his right hand, and his attack collided against the golden sword again. With a loud bang, the two of them retreated. Blood trickled out of Su Ming's mouth, and the man in golden armor also had blood on his lips.

This time, neither of them spoke. Instead, seven-tenths of the man in golden armor's power erupted from his body, causing his level of cultivation to rise straight to the great completion of Solar Kalpa Realm.

At this level, the sword he swung down could make the pupils of even Almighties in Mastery Realm shrink, which was a telling sign of just how powerful he was.

At the instant his power erupted, the man in golden armor rushed forward. The fighting spirit in Su Ming's eyes became even stronger, and the image of the golden sword had already crumbled several times before being reassembled in them. The two people collided once more.

This time, the instant Su Ming's two fingers clashed against the golden sword, a layer of ripples appeared in the area, which was the sign of laws being changed.

Booming sounds surged into the sky. The two of them retreated at the same time and coughed up a mouthful of blood, but they were not really injured. The blood was forced

out of them due to the rebound force against their Qi and blood. When they split apart, Su Ming threw his head back and laughed before rushing forward again.

"The seventh stage! Dynast Dao Kong has already cleared the seventh stage!"

"Could it be that he really wants to clear the ninth stage and become the ninth person who will clear this place?!"

"By the looks of it, you're right. I just wonder whether he'll succeed or not..."

"It would be easier to predict whether he can clear the eighth stage, since the main problem lies in the ninth stage. Dynast Dao Kong might not be able to clear it successfully. After all, plenty of prodigies have been forced to stop at the ninth stage!"

The people in the area immediately began discussing among themselves. Their eyes were glued on Su Ming. The events before them caused them to have numerous guesses as they watched in shock.

For the first time ever, fighting spirit rose in the calm eyes of the man in golden armor standing on the platform. With a bang, eight-tenths of his power erupted, and with a single move, he stepped into the initial stage of Mastery Realm. This sort of power was the difficult part of the eighth stage. In the past, those who had cleared this stage had needed to use many Enchanted Treasures to protect themselves against the shocking strike.

Whether or not they succeeded was related to their Enchanted Treasures and their levels of cultivation. It was also connected to the man in the golden armor. Usually, he would let those who had managed to reach the eighth stage pass and head straight to the ninth stage.

However, once they reached the ninth stage, it would be impossible for them to clear the stage successfully without... the power of those who were Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death.

Because of that, there were quite a large number of people who were stuck at the ninth stage and could not clear it. Unless they were Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death, it was impossible for the man in golden armor to let them pass.

However, it was different for Su Ming. The man in golden armor had acted as a garrison in for many years, but during the course of ten thousand years, he had never met a challenger like Su Ming. His act of clearly copying his divine ability had made the man in golden armor place an incredible amount of attention on him, which was why even though it was just the eighth stage, he treated it with great seriousness.

The power of those in the initial stage of Mastery Realm erupted from him. Those in the area outside could not detect it, since all presences and everything on the platform had

been locked tightly in the area. Outsiders could only watch with their naked eyes, but could not sense it directly.

"When the ordinary ones come forth to challenge this land, I will oft allow them to pass when they reach the eighth stage to see mine power during the ninth stage. If they can understand it and obtain something from it, then perhaps they can go further down their path of cultivation.

"But for thee, I shalt not do so."

Golden light shone in the man's eyes, and he swung the golden sword in his right hand. This time, he did not step forward, but instead used the simplest manner to swiftly slash down at Su Ming.

The platform trembled, and booming sounds reverberated in the air. The golden sword formed a golden long arc with its slash and charged towards Su Ming. His eyes sparkled and he also lifted his right hand. In the same manner, he slashed upwards.

Another shocking sound rose into the air. Su Ming's body trembled violently, and all his Qi and blood surged within him as if they were about to burst out of his body. He was forced back and coughed up a mouthful of blood. Only then did his body feel better, but he felt numb. For the span of a few breaths, he even felt as if he had turned into a mortal.

There was the sound of cracking from all parts of the golden armor. It might have been damaged, but it did not shatter. When the man was forced back, he too coughed up blood.

"Observe well. This is the power of the ninth stage in this land, and also nine-tenths of my power."

The man in golden armor raised his head, and the blood at the corners of his lips disappeared instantly. When he opened his mouth to speak, the power of those in Mastery Realm erupted from him with a bang. This no longer belonged to those in the initial stage of Mastery Realm, but those who had stepped into the Realm for many years and whose power had had time to accumulate.

"There were eight people who cleared this stage before you. During it, three of them withstood this power through brute force. Five of them did not, but since they had already moved into Mastery Realm, they had surpassed the limits of the Battle of the Golden Armor, and so I let them pass.

"If you can use your previous attack and shatter this golden sword, then I will release my full power... to fight against you!"

When the man's power erupted from him, he took a step towards Su Ming. The longsword in his hand shone and formed nine afterimages in midair, making it seem as if there were nine swords slicing down at the same time.

With fighting spirit burning in his eyes, Su Ming raised his right hand, formed a sword with two of his fingers, and at the instant a grim expression appeared on his face, he slashed at the incoming golden swords.

That slash drew a long arc in the air. When it crashed against the golden swords, without any sound or obvious reason, Su Ming's right hand trembled. The golden swords shuddered as well before crumbling at the same time as Su Ming was thrown backwards. When he was forced to the edge of the platform, he coughed up several mouthfuls of blood.

But joy appeared on his face. He did not even bother wiping off the blood at the corner of his lips, just threw his head back and laughed.

"I understand now, so that's how it is. Bring out your full power, we're fighting again!"

As Su Ming laughed, he raised his right hand and positioned two of his fingers into the shape of a sword, but this time, golden light shone on his fingers. The golden image of the sword in his eyes was no longer an illusion, but looked as if it had become real and replaced his pupils.

This scene landed in the eyes of the ten million people in the area outside, and their voices immediately resulted in a powerful commotion.

"The ninth stage! He really cleared the ninth stage!"

"I didn't expect there to truly be someone who can clear all nine stages in one go. I remember hearing from someone before that if there was someone who could clear the nine stages in the third Striking Lands in one go, Jin Xiu would bring out his strongest power... and the hidden tenth stage would appear!"

As the discussions echoed in the air, the man in golden armor regarded Su Ming seriously while he stood on the platform, as if he wanted to etch Su Ming's face deep into his mind.

"Ten thousand years ago, the ranks in the Striking Lands were reset. You are the first since then... to have me show my full power. I'll remember your name, Dao Kong... I do not know how much you have come to understand, but if you wish, you can leave now. You will still be considered to have cleared the stage. And think hard about your choice, for if you did not understand... you will not be able to parry my God Slayer Art!"

Chapter 1076 Striking Lands 5

Su Ming swung two fingers before him, and a golden light immediately appeared. During that instant, ripples spread through the area, as if some laws had been changed.

This scene landed in the man in golden armor's eyes, and his eyes sparkled. A smile appeared at the corner of his lips. He nodded and closed his eyes. It only lasted for the span of two breaths, but when he opened his eyes again, a power that had never appeared before on him while he was in the third Striking Lands erupted from his body.

This power had clearly been sealed before, because when it burst forth, semi-transparent talismans started flashing rapidly at the center of his brows and chest, as if they were suppressing the release of his power.

"Is this all that I can manage?" The man in golden armor sighed softly and mumbled to himself. When he lifted his head, his eyes had already turned gold. A presence which belonged to those in Fate Realm spread out from him.

"Oh well, even if this is all that I can muster, it is what can be considered to be my full power now. I can bring out the God Slayer Art in its complete form. Dao Kong, the name of this sword style is God Slayer. Observe well."

The instant the man in golden armor said those words, he gripped the golden sword with his right hand, then moved his left to the handle as well. With both hands holding onto the sword, he lifted it, and during that instant, a low roar came from his mouth, then with a presence of wanting to cut apart the world, he charged towards Su Ming.

The will to fight burned brightly in Su Ming's eyes. As he laughed towards the sky, the golden light in his right hand reached a piercing degree. He raised his left hand and held his right wrist, and with the same movement as that of the man, he took a step forward, then cut down at the man in golden armor, stirring up a loud bang.

Those outside the platform only saw two rays of golden light intersecting, two golden waves of sword aura crashing against each other, and heard a loud, astonishing bang that instantly made their ears ring. Their minds went blank.

With a loud bang, the sword Su Ming had formed with two of his fingers had cut apart space. It cut down all laws of fate and slashed apart the man in golden armor's fate while the golden sword cut down Su Ming's connection with the world.

This was the first wave of contact once the two of them began fighting against each other at full force. It was a battle of two people cutting down fate.

Then two types of transformed laws appeared behind Su Ming and the man in golden armor. They had been stirred up by the swords which brought chaos to a dimension by moving the target under their swings.

It was the second wave of contact. Then, under a loud bang that surged into the sky, the third wave of contact—the rebound—erupted.

Su Ming trembled violently, and in the midst of the loud bangs, he was flung out of the platform to land in the sky in the area outside. When he coughed up blood, the man in the golden armor also staggered backwards until he was at the edge where an invisible screen of light stopped him. It bounced him back, and he coughed up another mouthful of blood.

"You won! Remember its name, God Slayer Art!"

The man in golden armor smiled as he looked at Su Ming. As he spoke, he picked up the sword and swung it. Immediately, a name written in flourish appeared at the top of the pillar of light surrounded by multiple dragon-like beasts, as if it had been carved there by a sword.

Dao Kong!

At the instant the name showed up, the light on the pillar of light instantly stretched to one hundred thousand feet. The dragon-like beasts around it immediately roared. With a smile on his face, the man in golden armor gradually disappeared from the platform.

Su Ming stood in midair and wiped off the blood at the corners of his mouth. He lowered his head to stare at his right hand. Gradually, a hint of excitement and elation appeared in his eyes. He had not expected that clearing the Striking Lands would allow him to get this sort of serendipity.

This God Slayer Art might only be comprised of a single slash, but that one slash was enough to shock all people. It was a peerless strike that could bring forth incredible destructive power. In fact, based on what Su Ming could feel, that Art could compare to Mountain Shifter Art.

With it and the Mountain Shifter Art, Su Ming was confident he could win against even stronger opponents.

When the man in golden armor disappeared from the platform, the ten million cultivators in the area fell into a state of dead silence. They had witnessed the entire process, and soon, a shocking boom erupted from them.

The buzzing of voices spread through the crowd, revealing their shock as well as envy, and it continued boiling around them.

"It's only been a few moments. Only a small part of the two hours has passed, and he has already managed to clear three Striking Lands!"

"Even Dynasts Dao Lin and Dao Fa could not do this. No wonder they said that Dynast Dao Kong had been able to kill more than one thousand challengers previously. By the looks of it, these people had simply been reckless!"

"Say, do you think he'll go to the fourth Striking Lands?"

As the crowd discussed among themselves, the Dynasts were silent. Even Dao Lin and Dao Fa stood with narrowed eyes. They stared at Su Ming standing in midair, and a pressure they had never felt before rose in their hearts upon him clearing the third Striking Lands.

In the spot at the center of the nine continents in the first plane was the old man in Life Realm. As he waited on the lotus platform, his expression had also changed.

"Let's go have a look. Looks like we've underestimated this Dynast Dao Kong, but I'm also curious. How could a person's level of cultivation change so much in only the span of little more than one thousand years?"

"Sect Master Bei Bang, you do not need to be curious. I will give you the answer in a few days' time," the tanned old man behind him said with a smile, but his heart was already filled with shock. He knew deep down about how strong Jin Xiu of the third Striking Lands was, and because he did, he was more shocked by Su Ming's actions than many others.

The two sect masters by his side felt the same, but not a single hint of it showed on their faces. When they heard Bei Bang's words, they nodded in agreement.

The four of them turned into long arcs that rushed towards the fourth Striking Lands. Clearly, in their eyes, Su Ming was definitely going to go there.

Su Ming lifted his head when he was in the air near the third Striking Lands. His eyes sparkled, and he cast a glance at the people around the area. He then moved, but he did not go to the fourth Striking Lands. Instead, he charged towards the Rockslide Wastelands, which was the first Striking Lands he had cleared.

While the crowd was stupefied, Su Ming moved with a speed so fast that he cut through the air. Once he closed in on the first Striking Lands, he stepped into the area. After a moment, when booming sounds rose into the air, he walked out, and there was surprised delight on his face.

He moved again then. This time, he flew towards the second Striking Lands, the Stage of Illusions whose memories had been altered. It only lasted for about a couple dozen breaths before he flew out and threw his head back to laugh long and hard at the sky.

'Striking Lands, what a place. Rockslide Art, Star Illusion Art, and this God Slayer Art... Every single Striking Lands has a divine ability hidden within it.' Su Ming's eyes sparkled, and he charged towards the fourth Striking Lands.

As Su Ming closed in on the fourth Striking Lands, around a dozen people from the 999 continents in the third plane, and the 99 continents in the second plane within Morning Dao Sect opened their eyes in their isolation grounds. Brilliant light shone in their gazes.

Among those people were the eight who had cleared the third Striking Lands. There were also some who were too old to enter the Sect Master Chamber. Instead, they were powerful warriors of Morning Dao Sect scattered in the land and training on their own.

As they opened their eyes, waves of divine sense spread out from them and rushed to the nine continents in the first plane. Clearly, someone had informed them about what was happening, and Su Ming's actions had attracted their attention. They wanted to go and have a look at what was going on.

If those from ten thousand years ago were not mentioned, then during the period of the past ten thousand years only one person had managed to clear all nine stages of the fourth Striking Lands in one go. There were seven others who had made it up to the other stages, but had not cleared all nine at once.

There were eight people in total, and these eight were the people who had cleared the third Striking Lands.

Nadir Grotto was the fourth Striking Lands, and it was a name etched into the minds of all disciples of Morning Dao Sect. Extreme Darkness was a type of light that was said to have been formed by some unknown reason countless years ago to the north of True Morning Dao World.

Later on, that light was taken away by Morning Dao Sect to build the fourth Striking Lands.

There was a legend in Morning Dao Sect that only those who were in Mastery Realm could have the right to clear the fourth Striking Lands. If anyone went to challenge it recklessly, their soul would be injured by that Light of Extreme Darkness.

That was why unless they were absolute confident, no one would come challenge that land.

When the ten million cultivators in the area saw Su Ming rushing to the fourth Striking Lands, they immediately became excited, and stirring up loud whistles. The crowd turned into long arcs and followed after him.

The world shuddered at that moment. As Su Ming charged forward, he could see a gigantic pillar of light at the center of the fourth Striking Lands, which was located far

into the distance. The dragon-like beasts around the pillar of light were breathing out gusts of freezing air as they sat around it. Just looking at it would cause a freezing chill to creep up into people's hearts.

However, Su Ming had decided to leave his mark in Morning Dao Sect with this, to not keep a low profile. With that determination, he was so fast that he instantly closed in on the fourth continent, and when he was right beyond the Striking Land, he came to a stop, then cast a cold glance at it.

He might have decided to challenge that land and didn't mind being ostentatious, but he would still be smart about it. Because of that, his gaze landed on the eight names on the pillar of light.

After a moment, cultivators arrived beside Su Ming in succession. Bei Bang and the other three Sect Masters had arrived a long time ago. At that moment, they too kept silent and only stood by the side to observe.

Only when the dozen something divine senses from the second and third place descended did Bei Bang turn his head around to cast a sideways glance in their direction. His expression remained calm while the tanned old man behind him had a cold sneer on his lips.

Gradually, more people arrived, and discussions began once more.

"Does Dynast Dao Kong intend to continue challenging Striking Lands?"

"I reckon he's scared and doesn't have the confidence to do so, else why would he be so hesitant. He's worried that he won't be able to clear it."

"I don't think so. Look at how Dynast Dao Kong cleared the first three Striking Lands in succession and placing first in all of them. This is enough to show how strong he is. You might not know this yet, but Dao Fei Xian was also killed by Dynast Dao Kong earlier."

As the sounds of people talking among themselves rose into the air, time slowly passed. A quarter of an hour later, Su Ming's eyes swiftly focused. He took a swift step forward, and at the instant the area around him fell silent, he stepped into the fourth Striking Land.

Chapter 1077 Striking Lands 6

Su Ming's movement immediately caused the area to fall into instant silence. All gazes were gathered on him and followed him as he entered the platform, but he did not pay any attention to being the center of attention of ten million cultivators.

What he wanted to do was to let all those people see how he would amaze them. He wanted to be arrogant, to intimidate all of them. When Su Ming was in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he had risen to power from being weak. So when he returned to True Morning Dao World, there was no way he would allow himself to continue to be humiliated like he was in the past.

Before, Su Ming had been observing the fourth Striking Lands. While scrutinizing it, he found some vague clues. When he moved forward and stepped onto the platform, he immediately sensed a freezing chill that was completely different from the area outside.

That chill did not spread out from the air and neither did it come from the platform beneath his feet. Instead, it was created by the laws of that land. It was as if the laws had made it so that the place had to be cold, and hence, it was compulsory for the place to be cold.

"Challenger, who are you?!" a cold and indifferent voice asked from the gigantic pillar of light.

The next moment, ripples appeared near the platform which was surrounded by the dragon-like beasts and a vague existence with black wings came to being. It was dressed in a black robe.

Its eyes were closed and it looked like it was sealed in the pillar of light. That man was precisely the one who had changed the laws in the land and was the source of all the chill in the land.

"Dao Kong," Su Ming answered faintly.

"There are two paths in Nadir Grotto. One of them is where those who fail will definitely not die. If you pass through all nine stages, you will be considered to have cleared this Striking Land. The second path is where you will certainly die if you fail. You will also clear this Striking Land if you clear all nine stages there.

"Tell me your choice." The freezing voice was loud, but those in the area outside could not hear it.

"What's the difference?" Su Ming asked in a languid manner while frowning.

"The difference is whether you want to die or live." There was a mighty pressure in the icy cold voice, bringing with it an air of those who regarded themselves superior to all others.

The words might have been cold, and the arrogance exuding by their speaker was incredibly clear. When Su Ming heard his speech, a brilliant light shone in his eyes, and he started laughing.

"I choose the second path," he said faintly.

The figure which seemed to be sealed in the pillar of light opened its eyes swiftly. At the instant a brilliant light shone in them, all the dragon-like beasts surrounding that pillar of light roared together and descended. Dark light shone on them before they swiftly fused together to form one single figure.

That figure had a body covered in black feathers and had a pair of wings like those of a bat. Red light shone in his eyes, and he looked exactly like the figure sealed in the pillar of light.

"With each three breaths, you will be considered to have cleared a stage. If you last for more than thirty breaths, you will have cleared the fourth Striking Lands. In the ten thousand years since the rankings were reset, only one person has cleared the fourth Striking Lands, and he chose the first path."

Red light shone in the eyes of the person with black feathers, and there was a ghastly chill to his voice. As he spoke, he moved forward, and a piercing black light erupted from his body.

That black light seemed to be able to devour all sources of light. At the instant it appeared, it caused Su Ming to feel as if he had been stabbed by countless needles. In fact, it was difficult for him to even open his eyes due to the piercing light.

Wisps of freezing air also spread out from it and seeped into all of his pores as if it wanted to manifest into ice on his skin.

With a loud bang, Su Ming fell backwards and staggered a few steps. When he lifted his head, a loud whooshing sound reached his ears. What he saw was a layer of black light. Immediately, the feeling as if his whole body was suffering from sharp stabs of pain, ice was on his skin, and the sensation of growing heavier rose within him once again.

The booming sounds rose again. Su Ming moved back until he was forced to the edge of the platform. When he coughed up a mouthful of black blood, the cold voice spoke again.

"Three breaths, you passed the first stage."

Su Ming lifted his head, and during that instant, the black light let out a whooshing sound again as it erupted from the person with black feathers.

The black light looked as if it covered the sky and the whole world, causing everything that Su Ming could see to be replaced by it. He found it difficult to even move. His body felt as if there were ten thousand needles pierced into it. In fact, even breathing was

painful. The moment he exhaled, cracking sounds could be heard, as if ice had formed on his face.

When the people outside the platform saw it, looks of pity immediately appeared on their faces. There were also those who delighted in Su Ming's misfortune. As discussions echoed in the air, Bei Bang shook his head. The three Sect Masters behind him did not say anything, but the tanned old man was smiling coldly.

The dozen something divine senses were starting to show signs of getting ready to scatter away.

"He will only be able to last for at most four stages, then he will definitely fail!"

"That's right, by the looks of it, four stages will be his limit. This Light of Extreme Darkness is known as one of the five-colored divine lights. It might not be complete, but it's definitely not something that a normal person can withstand."

"I thought another Dao Xuan Yi would appear. This Dao Kong might have quite the grand presence, but he is only worth this much when a real challenge presents itself."

"Haha, Dao Xuan Yi is known as the strongest person among all generations over the last ten thousand years in Morning Dao Sect. If it was not because he gave up on being an Dynast of his own accord and focused on his training, there is no way he would not be one of the Dynasts."

As the dozen something divine senses spoke among themselves and were about to disperse, their conversation stopped abruptly. The signs of dispersing were also immediately gone. All of the divine senses focused on the platform at once.

They were not the only ones. At that moment, the discussions among the ten million people in the area also fell instantly silent. All their gazes landed on the platform, and even Bei Bang and the other three looked over.

When Su Ming saw that the world had turned black on the platform, a cold sneer appeared on his lips. It might be difficult for him to move his body, and the ice over his body might also seem to have sealed his cultivation base, but he could still speak.

"That's all? Rockslide Art!"

The instant Su Ming's words tumbled out of his lips, booming sounds sliced through the air. Gigantic meteors appeared out of nowhere in the air above him. They were traveling so fast that when Su Ming finished speaking, they had already descended on the platform.

Loud booms shook the sky and earth. The sound of the dozens of gigantic meteors crashing against the platform shook the ground. In fact, it caused even the fourth continent to tremble.

As the meteors landed, the black light in front of Su Ming distorted. A voice tinted with shock came from the darkness before him.

"Rockslide Art! You actually learned that Art?!"

As the stones fell and booming sounds rose, Su Ming wiped away the blood at the corners of his lips, then cast a cold glance at the person with black feathers. A strange and enchanting light gradually appeared on his face, and a crimson shade tainted his hair.

He licked his lips, and blood veins appeared in the whites of his eyes. As they intersected with each other, red light shone from them.

"I choose the third path."

Su Ming's voice had become hoarse. After speaking, he took a swift step forward. When he lifted his right hand, he struck the center of his brows. Immediately, he disappeared from the line of sight of the person with black feathers and turned into a huge planet. That planet moved and became a blood-red heart.

As it started beating with loud thumps, the expression of the person with black feathers changed, and black light immediately appeared around his body. It swept out in all directions to fight against the signs of collapse that were stirred up by the beating of the heart.

"Star Illusion Art!" a low voice said.

During that moment, a crack formed at the center of the blood-red heart, instantly causing the person with black feathers to feel as if his soul was about to be devoured. It lasted for only the span of a few breaths before that person with black feathers let out a loud bang, and his body crumbled to pieces. Black threads from its soul was devoured by the blood-red heart before it shone with a red light and turned back into Su Ming.

His hair had turned completely red. Crimson light shone in his eyes, and there was an indescribable malice and strangeness within them, along with madness.

As Su Ming laughed madly, he took a step forward without any hesitation. He charged towards the pillar of light where the real body of the person with black feathers resided. There was a glint in his eyes that shone with surprise, but there was still a cold sneer on his lips.

However, at that moment, Su Ming seized the air with his right hand, and the Life Inequity Spear appeared in his hand. Once he held it and leaped up, golden light expanded to an area of one hundred thousand feet.

With a loud bang, the tip of Su Ming's Life Inequity Spear crashed into the pillar of light. At the same time, the power of cutting fate spread out. The ripples formed by it crashed against the pillar. Some of them shot inside, and in it was the power that assured absolute accuracy of Su Ming's God Slayer Art. It ignored the pillar of light and sent forth the second wave of attack at the person with black feathers.

Booming sounds rose again, and the third attack from God Slayer Art—the rebound—also shot out, causing the pillar of light to let out a buzz. As countless tremors shook it, even the expression of the person with black feathers changed.

"Rockslide Art, Star Illusion Art, God Slayer Art... You actually learned all of them?!"

"And... Mountain Shifter!"

A red light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He lifted his left hand and formed a seal before he pointed into the distance. Immediately, the fourth continent trembled. The tremors then surpassed all that the fourth continent had experienced previously. Under the shocked and flabbergasted expressions of the ten million people outside, a mountain in the distance trembled and lifted off the ground...

But no one would not have been shocked if only one was affected. As the sounds of people sucking in sharp breaths echoed in the air, the many mountains of the fourth continent all rose into the air one after another. The ground let out shocking booms, and nearly one thousand mountains appeared in the sky, forming countless inverted images!

When this scene was witnessed by the crowd, it was enough for the hearts of all people to tremble and the dozen something divine senses to be shocked. Even the pupils of Bei Bang constricted, for he could feel the terrifying power residing in those mountains.

Chapter 1078 Striking Lands 7

The expressions of all ten million cultivators in the area changed drastically. When they looked towards the sky, their gazes were filled with great fear. They could clearly sense the might and pressure coming from the force of the mountains. It was a power that could make the entire continent tremble.

Among all of Su Ming's divine abilities, this could be considered his strongest Art before he had learned God Slayer Art and when not counting his inborn abilities. He had learned it in the fifth kiln, and it came from... Mountain Shifter Expanse Cosmos, a world that did not belong to Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos!

It was the strongest Art in Mountain Shifter Expanse Cosmos, and its might... was naturally difficult to measure. Su Ming had only activated one-thousandth of its true might. After all, he could not bring out its true power with his current level of cultivation, but even so, he already brought forth... a power that could threaten even Almighties in Fate Realm.

As the ten million cultivators' expressions changed, the tanned old man sucked in a breath. Even the pupils of Bei Bang, the Almighty in Life Realm, shrank. There was a solemn expression on his face that had never been seen before.

If the onlookers were already reacting in such a way, then the person with the black feathers in the pillar of light who was at the center of that mighty pressure could sense it even better. His eyes sparkled. Immediately, black light burst from his body with a loud whooshing sound. When it surged into the air, the color of the pillar instantly turned completely black. At the same time, the black light spread out, and in the blink of an eye, the platform turned completely dark in the eyes of the ten million cultivators in the area.

Even if they were just looking at it, they felt sharp stabs of pain in their eyes. A chilling wave surged up their bodies, as if their organs had been frozen over. In fact, their limbs also became stiff under that light, and they felt as if they had lost their power and become mortal, but their cultivation bases still remained in their bodies!

The Light of Extreme Darkness was one of the five-colored divine lights. Its power was so great that the expressions of all people who spoke of it would change when it resided in the northern most region in True Morning Dao World many years ago.

The instant the black light appeared and sharp pain assaulted Su Ming's body, causing him to feel stiff, the mountains in the sky rushed down to the ground.

The shadows of the mountains not only enveloped the platform, but even all the cultivators in the area. As the mountains came down, their shadow continued growing bigger, and to the cultivators in the area, it looked like Su Ming and the person with black feathers had attacked at the same time. One of them froze the other's body, and the other sent down destruction from the sky.

Bei Bang's expression changed drastically. He was also the only one who had his mobility under the Light of Extreme Darkness. He swung his arm up to form a seal. At the same time, he let out a low shout.

"Morning Dao Seal!"

Booming sounds immediately surged up, and the ten million cultivators in the area shuddered. The sharp stabs of pain and stiffness instantly disappeared. At that moment, there was only one thought in their minds—retreat swiftly.

In an instant, the ten million cultivators tumbled backwards like a tidal wave. After withdrawing to a spot far, far away, they could still hear the loud booms. The ground trembled, and the mountains crashed into the pillar of light on the platform.

In the mid of the booming sounds, the mountains struck down, and the black light spreading out from the pillar of light flashed. Whooshing sounds mixed with the booms. Each time they echoed together, a mountain would crumble.

As the Light of Extreme Darkness and the mountains fought against each other, Su Ming endured the sharp pain in his body and rushed forward swiftly. But just as he was about to thrust the spear in his hand into the pillar of light again, the bald crane suddenly screeched in his mind.

"It's mine! IT'S MINE! Darn it all, this is MINE!"

"This light is mine! It's mine! What's going on? I seem to have remembered something... Ah, darn it all, I can't remember it. BUT! I know that black light is mine! I should have a light with five colors, and when they're all together, I could overpower all the Immortals' Daos in the universe!"

There was an excitement and madness that had never appeared before in the bald crane's piercing voice. When it echoed in Su Ming's mind, he froze for a moment, and the crimson shade in his hair faded away to return to normal.

This was not Su Ming recovering on his own, but the bald crane's screech containing a power that could shock hearts. It forcefully turned Su Ming back from his destruction-inducing state.

As the bald crane screamed, the mountains fell, and the black light was defeated. At that moment, the bald crane flew out on its own from Su Ming's storage bag. With bloodshot eyes, it gritted its teeth and rushed to the pillar of light recklessly.

"It's mine! You damn thief, that light is mine!"

In Su Ming's memories, the bald crane had never been in such a frenzy before. Even when it was in the fifth kiln and was stimulated to seek new heights, it had not reacted in such a way.

It did not have many feathers, but it had a few downy ones. At that moment, they all stood up. With bloodshot eyes flashing in madness, the bald crane's twisted expression seemed to scream that the person with black feathers had stolen all of its crystals.

"Just watch me, your Grandpa Crane is going to teach you a lesson! You damn thief, you stole my black light while I wasn't paying attention! This light is MINE!" the bald crane screeched and swiftly closed in on the pillar.

That black light swept out, and sharp stabs of pain immediately spread through Su Ming's body, but the bald crane was completely unharmed. Not only did it not stop, it even became faster. With a bang, it crashed against the pillar of light, and its gaze met that of the person with black feathers.

When they looked into each other's eyes, the person with black feathers was first stunned, then his expression changed drastically, in a manner that had never happened for him before. He shuddered, as if he was about to move back, but he was sealed in the pillar of light and could not withdraw. He then immediately let out a shrill scream.

"It's you! Damn it! You're not dead?! How could you not be dead?! Why can't you just die!"

Black light spread out in an intense manner from the person with black feathers, causing Su Ming to be unable to get closer to it. He staggered backwards, and a loud booming sound reverberated in the air. The mountains continued descending without stop. Each time one crumbled, the black light would become dimmer, and it would also make the person with black feathers in the pillar shudder, but no matter how he shuddered, he did not tremble as badly as when he saw the bald crane.

"You're mine! And the light is also mine! This damn light, this cute light, it sealed you! Darn it all, this light is far too ADORABLE!" The bald crane was already rambling incoherently. With a loud shout, half of its body seeped through the pillar... and it entered it.

Su Ming had known since a long time ago that the bald crane was immune to all seals. When he saw it again, a sparkle shone in his eyes. He moved back upon another flash of the black light and swung his arm. Immediately, mountains surrounded the area. As booming sounds rose up while the mountains crumbled in their fight against the black light, the shattered stones turned into powder. It stirred up a windstorm and blocked... the gazes from the world outside.

All of that could not be seen by those in the area beyond. The existence of the black light blocked off their vision, and it was the same for the voices. No one in the area outside could hear anything. Besides, the ten million cultivators in the area as well as Bei Bang had already retreated into the distance. The storm of powder due to the collapse of Su Ming's mountains only accentuated everyone's inability to see clearly.

Because of that, only Su Ming, the person with black feathers, and the bald crane knew what was going on inside.

When the bald crane pushed half of its body through the pillar of light, the person with black feathers screamed shrilly, as if he was extremely terrified and wanted to flee, but he could not leave the area of the seal. His screams were tinted with despair.

"Don't worry, popper... come to Grandpa Crane's bosom and let me embrace you tightly..." The bald crane's expression was distorted. Its voice also became strange. As it used all of its strength to crawl into the pillar of light, it kept on speaking to the trembling and struggling person with black feathers.

Its words made even's Su Ming skin crawl when he heard them. As for the person with black feathers, he felt it even more. As he screamed, he struggled, but it did not make any difference. He could only watch the bald crane continue crawling in with all its strength. By then, most of its body had already entered the pillar of light.

"Come here, baby, you're mine... Haha, this light is mine! I remember now! Darn it all, even you are mine!

"Hmm? Could it be that I'm your father and you're my son?" Clearly, once this question appeared in the bald crane's head, it caused it a great deal of confusion. It scratched its head before twisting its body with great strength and completely crawling into the pillar. Then, while laughing and licking its lips, its eyes bloodshot... it even started to mumble in a deranged manner.

"Son, your pops is here now. Don't be scared, I'll be veeeery gentle... Nah, Grandpa Crane sounds better. Let's do over. You don't have to be anxious." The bald crane's body trembled while it laughed in a piercing voice, then even took a few steps back.

"Baby, your Grandpa Crane is here. You don't have to be scared anymore..." The bald crane's voice was immediately replaced by the person with black feathers' loud screams. At the instant it rose up, the bald crane pounced on him like a malicious dog on food, then wrapped its wings around him.

At the instant their bodies touched each other, the person with black feathers shuddered intensely. A vortex appeared at the center of his brows, and during that instant, a black feather appeared from between his brows while he shivered. Once it disappeared into the center of the bald crane's brows, the person with black feathers went limp. Its body turned into a ray of black light that spread outwards before disappearing without a trace.

Disappearing along with him was the bald crane, who seemed to have regained its senses and swiftly fled back into Su Ming's storage bag.

"I'm going to be rich! Little Boy Su, darn it all, I'm going to be RICH! How many crystals do you reckon this feather will sell for? Do you think I'll be able to get one hundred for it?"

"Can you use that Light of Extreme Darkness?" Su Ming suddenly asked.

"Of course. It feels as if it belongs to me. Strange... it feels as if it has always belonged to me," the bald crane murmured under its breath.

Su Ming's lips curled up into a smile. He raised his right hand and swung it. Immediately, the storm and the whirlwind around the area dissipated. Besides the many mountains which had been turned to powdered stone, the others tumbled backwards to return to their original spots.

The black light on the platform had already disappeared. When everything returned to normal, Su Ming turned around and looked towards the crowd beyond the platform. He saw astonished gazes along with expressions filled with disbelief.

He did not even need to turn his head around to know that what caused the people to be in shock was because the person with black feathers who had existed for an unknown number of years in the pillar of light in Morning Dao Sect... had vanished without a trace.

Chapter 1079 His Name Is Sang

"He's gone..." After a long while, when Su Ming walked off the platform, the crowd registered what had happened. Then, an uproar that seemed to surge into the sky rose among them.

"This... This is... what happened? Why is the person with black feathers who has always existed in the pillar of light... gone?"

"Can Dynast Dao Kong be considered to have cleared the fourth Striking Lands?"

"Nonsense. The person guarding the land is gone, so you tell me whether Dynast Dao Kong cleared the stage!"

"Just what level of cultivation does he possess? How can this be? Could the garrison have been killed?"

"This isn't the main point. The point is, the garrison of the fourth Striking Lands has disappeared. How... are we going to challenge this Striking Lands in the future?"

"This might be something that has never happened in Morning Dao Sect..." The sounds of discussion had never been so strong. Even when Su Ming had cleared the previous three Striking Lands, the voices had not come close to such loudness.

The Dynasts in the area, including Dao Lin and Dao Fa, held great shock and astonishment in their eyes as they looked towards Su Ming. In fact, there was already an indescribable wariness and fear in the depths of their hearts.

On the other hand, the dozen something divine senses who had descended had swiftly dissipated while keeping their silence. However, the instant they did so, a dozen

something spots from the ninety-nine continents in the second plane and the 999 continents in the third plane let out booming sounds. A figure shot out from each of them, and after most of them raised their heads to stare at the nine continents in the first plane, they took a step to change upwards.

They knew that something major had happened. The garrison of the fourth Striking Lands had disappeared. This was something unprecedented and would surely stir up a huge storm. If they were late, Dynast Dao Kong might manage to die, and they would lose their chance to challenge him.

Besides them, old Bei Bang standing at the edge of the group of cultivators on the fourth continent had a dark expression on his face. He stared at the empty pillar of light, then at Su Ming. He did not say anything though and remained silent. He could only be considered as one of the core members in Morning Dao Sect, but not the top one, since there were quite a few people whose ranks were above his. Those people had to have learned of what happened... and would probably come soon.

The three sect masters behind Bei Bang were stunned, especially that tanned old man. He had even sucked in a sharp breath, and for the first time ever, wariness appeared in his gaze as he stared at Su Ming.

The moment Su Ming walked off the platform and stepped into the air, wind stirred and clouds began to surge. Thunder roared, and a gigantic vortex formed.

As it spun and roared, three wills descended from within it with a bang. The moment they did so, the hearts of the cultivators in the area immediately trembled. Even Bei Bang shuddered and lowered his head before wrapping his fist in his palm and bowing to the sky.

As he did this, the three sect masters behind him immediately wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed respectfully as well. The ten million cultivators around him also worshipped those three wills together.

Su Ming who stood in midair raised his head to look at the vortex. His eyes shone. He decided not to act too arrogantly in this matter and lowered his head before bowing as well.

"Dao Kong!"

The instant Su Ming bowed, a buzzing sound came out with a bang from the vortex in the sky like a God. A voice spread to all four planes like tumbling waves and reached more than ten million continents.

"What have you done to the existence of Extreme Darkness guarding this land?! Why has the presence of his vitality disappeared?!" The buzzing spread out again. There was a freezing chill contained in it, and it immediately caused all the living beings in the

world to feel as if their hearts had withered and their lives would end if the speaker so much as gave the command.

"Death Realm!"

There were naturally those who had great knowledge of things in the world. At that moment, in shock, they lowered their heads even further. Each disciple in Morning Dao Sect knew that Morning Dao Sect... had accumulated its strength over countless years, and it was fathomless!

"I don't know," Su Ming said flatly while shaking his head. He remained composed, and not a single change could be detected on him. He might be in Morning Dao Sect, but it did not matter to him.

More than one thousand years ago, Dao Kong had stepped into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. The Almightyies in True Morning Dao World fending against the Barren Lands of Divine Essence had mentioned that they only listened to Progenitor Dao Chen. When he stepped into Morning Dao Sect, the Blood-Soul Fusion test had given him the golden bloodline. If Su Ming still did not understand what was going on, then he would have lived his life in vain.

Was there anything in Morning Dao Sect that he should be afraid of?

When Su Ming delivered his answer, the three wills in the vortex did not immediately speak, but the increasingly oppressive mighty pressure seemed to continuously gather around them in that silence. It made the ten million cultivators in the land to immediately begin trembling.

"Cancel Dao Kong's right to be a Dynast." After some time, the buzzing sound came from the vortex again. At the instant that voice spoke, another one filled with an imposing tone reverberated in the air as well.

"Cancel his right to be a direct descendant."

"Excluding those who are sect masters, all those who share the same blood as him will be demoted to being members of a branch family."

"Banish him to Dao Ocean. Suppress him there until he voices his secrets. If he does not answer in ten thousand years, then he shall sink into Dao Ocean until the universe is destroyed."

The three buzzing voices spoke one after another. The mighty pressure contained in them made it sound as if they could decide the fate of all lives as well as the direction the world should head towards with just their words.

"This punishment will be effective immediately!" As the words left the vortex, a gigantic palm stretched out and charged towards Su Ming with loud booming sounds.

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He lifted his head to stare at the incoming palm without any change in his expression. He was making a bet about whether Dao Chen, who was in constant isolation, would appear to interfere. If that did not appear, then Su Ming would summon the fifth kiln and slaughter his way out of Morning Dao Sect.

Even though he would have wasted his identity as Dao Kong, he had methods to obtain a new identity. However, unless he absolutely had to, Su Ming was unwilling to do such a thing.

The huge palm came towards him with loud booming sounds. At the instant it was about to touch him, a brilliant light filled with madness shone in Su Ming's eyes, and suddenly, a ray of golden light descended from the heavens, a place even higher than where the vortex was located.

The golden light was so fast that its speed could not be put to words. The instant it appeared, it shot through the huge palm pressing down towards Su Ming. Amid the loud bangs that were stirred up, the palm crumbled and was disassembled without any resistance on its part. The golden light then stopped in front of Su Ming. It showed up to be a piece of paper!

It was a very ordinary and common piece of rice paper.

There was ink that had yet to dry on it. When dazzling golden light shone from it, a presence that made the sky, the earth, the entire Morning Dao Sect, and even the entire True Morning Dao World tremble spread out without restraint.

"Dynast Dao Kong shall now act as the garrison of the fourth Striking Lands, and he shall be responsible for all those who come to challenge the land," a faint voice said from the rice paper, and a young man appeared next to it. Once he showed up, he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to Su Ming. As he spoke, the young man did not even bother to look at the vortex in the sky, but instead raised his right hand and swung it. Then, the rice paper immediately flew towards Su Ming.

"This is a gift from Lord Dao Chen to you, Your Highness. I shall take my leave now."

As he spoke, the young man cast Su Ming a faint smile. In that smile was a profoundness Su Ming could not decipher. It was as if a great wave of sentiment had risen within the man. He turned around and stepped into the air where he disappeared without a trace. From the start till the moment he disappeared, he never looked at the vortex, treating it as if it was not even there.

The area was covered by a dead silence. Everyone's expressions might have looked the same as before, but an astonishing storm had stirred up in their hearts, especially in

that of old Bei Bang. His expression changed several times, and the three sect masters behind him also had bewilderment and shock on their faces.

Stripping Dao Kong of his status as Dynast and intending to banish him to Dao Ocean was the highest order from the Council of Sect Masters. The three ancient existences in the vortex were also incredibly illustrious people in the council. There were plenty of times when their words had decided everything within True Morning Dao World.

But that rice paper... its presence was enough to tell everyone that it... came from the Kalpa Lord Dao Chen! Everyone also knew that the young man just then was the disciple responsible for acting as the guard at the entrance to Progenitor Dao Chen's isolation grounds. He'd had that position for countless years, and was also the one who would usually deliver the Progenitor's orders!

He... was the only disciple Progenitor Dao Chen had accepted after all his disciples had suddenly died while he was in isolation!!

There was only one word to his name—Sang!

The area was enveloped in dead silence. No one spoke. With a calm expression, Su Ming put away the rice paper into his storage bag. When he turned around, he stepped into the air and turned into a long arc that charged forward. He, too, did not cast a single glance at the vortex in the sky. At that moment, there was an almost oppressive silence coming from it.

When Su Ming left into the distance, not a single sound came from the vortex. Instead, it distorted, and then just like that, it disappeared into thin air.

This sort of quiet disappearance caused all the people to be able to sense the anger hidden in the silence, but no matter how angered they were, it was useless. This was the order given by Progenitor Dao Chen himself, and it had the power to directly overrule the Council of Sect Masters' orders.

Due to this matter, the people in the area had also shifted from being wary to not daring to provoke Su Ming recklessly. There were also some who immediately thought of the golden light appearing a few days ago in the first plane. The golden light that spread out from the Blood-Soul Fusion test became the best explanation for what had happened just then.

'Is Dynast Dao Kong going to challenge the Fifth Striking Lands?' As Su Ming left into the distance, the ten million cultivators behind him focused their gazes on him, and various speculations rose in their hearts.

Soon, they obtained their answers. Su Ming did not head to the Fifth Striking Lands. As he charged forward, he moved towards the spot used for the Anointment Ceremony.

He might have appeared to be in good condition, but in truth, he had been injured under the attack of the Light of Extreme Darkness, and half of the two hours had passed. More importantly, if the requirement to challenge the Fourth Striking Lands was Mastery Realm, then Su Ming did not have too much confidence in regards to the Fifth Striking Lands, which was why he decided to put it aside for the time being. When the chance arose, he would head there and see what it was about.

As he charged forward, Su Ming returned to his lotus platform at the spot used for the Anointment Ceremony and sat down cross-legged. When he closed his eyes, he began healing his injuries.

Gradually, after Su Ming returned, the crowd, too, came back from the Fourth Striking Lands. In time, the other Dynasts also returned. As the people in the area spoke to each other in whispers and the Dynasts contemplated their surroundings with faces filled with complicated emotions and sullenness, the two hours break passed.

Su Ming opened his eyes.

"Sect Master Bei Bang, please heal me," Su Ming said calmly and looked towards Bei Bang.

Chapter 1080 Astonishment Arriving!

When Su Ming's words were heard by the crowd, the area immediately fell silent. The ten million cultivators around the platforms instantly looked towards Su Ming and Bei Bang.

Bei Bang frowned then said languidly, "Dynast Dao Kong, since you were not injured during the challenges, you are not suffering from something that I am supposed to heal."

Su Ming remained as calm as ever and did not continue speaking, but he put it to memory. He also remembered how that Sect Master Bei Bang had asked him whether he had understood what was going on previously and also remembered the people who had mocked him the most in the area. He would naturally not let their actions slide.

Old Bei Bang's expression was slightly sour. With a swing of his arm, he said in a low voice, "The challenge continues!"

After a short period of silence, people began issuing challenges once more. However, the person they challenged was no longer Su Ming, but someone else.

There were quite a number of people who did that, which resulted in a completely different scene to appear compared to the one earlier... No one came to challenge Su Ming. Instead, the number of challengers for the others increased.

There were even a few challengers that came to Dao Lin and Dao Fa's lotus platforms. But besides Su Ming himself, not a single other person appeared on his platform.

This scene lasted for about one hour, until the first challenger appeared in a flash on Su Ming's platform. It was a middle-aged man dressed in a sackcloth. His expression was incredibly solemn. At the instant he appeared, some of those in the crowd who were watching immediately recognized the man.

"Dao Yun! He came to challenge Dynast Dao Kong?!"

"He was forced to a stop at the ninth stage of the third Striking Lands, but he was previously known as the person who was most likely to clear the third Striking Lands. It's said that his power is fathomless!"

"This is what is meant by a fight between powerful warriors. Looks like Dynast Dao Kong's challengers from now on will be only those who are famous people in Morning Dao Sect."

There were plenty of discussions in the surrounding area, while on the platform, the middle-aged man wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to Su Ming.

"I am Dao Yun. I did not come to challenge your right as a Dynast, but only wish to exchange blows with you. Your Highness, please grant me your teachings."

As he spoke, he had his cultivation base spread out. It was... the power which belonged to those who were already half a step into Mastery Realm, a power that had already surpassed great completion of Solar Kalpa Realm.

As his power spread out, a brilliant light shone in his eyes. When he lifted his right hand, a layer of dark clouds appeared above his head. Thunder roared, and the dark clouds twisted until they turned into a huge shield that moved to stand tall before him. When the middle-aged man took a step forward, the shield of clouds let out a bang and charged forward.

Su Ming raised his right hand and swung it, causing a bang. Immediately, a large layer of falling rocks appeared out of nowhere in front of him. Booming sounds rose without end as those stones crashed against the incoming attack.

The shield shuddered and was torn to pieces, changing back into clouds and fog. At that moment, purplish-black light suddenly appeared on the middle-aged man's face. He opened his mouth and sucked in a sharp breath. Immediately, the clouds and fog were sucked into his body through his eyes, nose, ears, and mouth.

Then, even his eyes started shining with a purplish-black light. With his mouth wide open, he let out a loud roar that shocked the skies.

"Darkening Clouds!"

As the middle-aged man roared, purple fog gushed out of his eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. A large amount of it also burst out from the other parts of his body. His blood and essence were in that fog.

After it condensed, it turned into a giant made of purple around the middle-aged man. That giant took a large step forward and charged towards Su Ming with loud bangs.

After executing this divine ability, the middle-aged man looked as thin as a skeleton. Feebly, he sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. Dark light shone at the center of his brows, showing he was controlling the giant of fog through the distance to charge at Su Ming.

The middle-aged man had yet to reach Mastery Realm, but the fog giant formed by the divine ability he executed exuded the power belonging to those in Mastery Realm. When it took a step forward, it instantly closed in on Su Ming and raised its right hand to push its palm against its target.

The air was torn. A destructive power erupted from the palm of the fog giant as if it wanted to instantly destroy Su Ming's body and form.

Su Ming remained calm. When the fog giant approached him, he raised his right hand and threw a punch at it. He did not use his cultivation base, but only the greatest force he could muster from his physical body.

With a bang, the fog giant shuddered and collapsed. Fog tumbled backwards. The meditating middle-aged man coughed up a mouthful of blood, and his body was immediately seized by a phantom claw formed by the fog sweeping towards him. He then swiftly left the lotus platform.

"Thank you for sparing me, Your Highness. I, Dao Yun, will surely repay your kindness. If you open your own chamber, I will definitely join you." The thin middle-aged man's face was pale, but determination shone in his eyes, as if his fight against Su Ming had allowed him to understand something. At that moment, he bowed deeply towards Su Ming before leaving.

After he left, Su Ming narrowed his eyes and suddenly coughed up a mouthful of blood. His face turned slightly pale before he cast an indifferent gaze at Bei Bang, who was beyond his platform and had an incredibly dark expression on his face at that moment.

Su Ming might not have said anything, but most of the ten million cultivators in the area immediately understood the meaning behind his actions. Bei Bang had refused to offer

his life force to help cure his injuries with the excuse that Su Ming had not been injured during the challenges, but now... even though Su Ming's actions were clearly very fake, there was indeed blood, so it could be said that he had been injured during battle.

After some time, with a dark expression on his face, Bei Bang let out a cold harrumph and lifted his right foot to step on his own platform. Su Ming's platform was then immediately covered by a gentle white light. It blinked a few times, and Su Ming sensed a vast amount of life force surging into his body through the platform.

His injuries recovered slightly, but only by the portion that he'd lost in the last fight. The gentle light did not cure any of his other injuries. Su Ming's expression was calm, but he was laughing coldly in his heart.

His goal was very simple. The old man in Life Realm had been arrogant with his words before and had even mentioned that with his cultivation base he could offer endless healing. Then what Su Ming wanted to do next was to suck that old man dry.

'It's been a long time since I fought to my heart's' content.'

A desire to fight shone in Su Ming's eyes as he waited quietly. He had not killed Dao Yun previously because he wanted the powerful warriors of Morning Dao Sect who truly had the right to challenge him to come forth so that he could fight to his heart's content.

After a moment, the weather above Su Ming's lotus platform changed, and a figure appeared in a flash.

"Chi Ling Wei, a Salu . I am at the initial stage of Mastery Realm. Your Highness, please grant me your teachings."

As the freezing voice rang in the air, the figure gained the corporeal form of a young man. He had a lean figure and a straight back. He was dressed in a green robe, and when he stood still, he was like a pine tree. His eyes were like lightning itself and his gaze was as sharp as blades when he looked towards Su Ming.

His arrival immediately caused the ten million cultivators in the area beyond to begin to buzz among themselves. At that moment, most of them were no longer paying any attention to the other Dynasts. Instead, they cast all gazes on Su Ming's lotus platform. After all, compared to the others, it did not matter whether it was the challenger or the one being challenged, Su Ming was the one existence that shone the brightest and was the one that attracted the most attention.

"Chi Ling Wei, the strongest prodigy over the course of ten thousand years among the Salus. He successfully cleared the third Striking Lands, but was forced to a halt at the fourth stage in the fourth Striking Lands!"

"This person has always been cold. He poured every single bit of his heart and soul into training. He has already reached Mastery Realm, and even during the battle against the Immortals' Union, he showed brilliant results. He is known as one of the thirty-six Almightyies of this generation of ten thousand years in Morning Dao Sect. It's said that he's ranked thirteenth in the Immortals' Union. Just a little bit more, and he would be among the top ten!"

"That's right, none of the Dynasts, not even Dao Lin and Dao Fa were included in those ranks..."

Su Ming's eyes lit up. This was the first person among his challengers in Morning Dao Sect who had stepped into Mastery Realm. By the looks of it, he should not have arrived in that Realm long ago, but had only made his foundation stable. He had not yet reached the level of Flame Fiends' Progenitor, but he was not too far from him.

When Chi Ling Wei finished speaking, a cold glare shone in his eyes. He looked up and formed a seal which he pointed at Su Ming's feet.

"Heavy!" When he spoke, a powerful force bore down on Su Ming's body, as if a pair of invisible hands had shot out of the ground to seize his body to drag him down.

Su Ming shook his head.

"Your power is still not great enough to challenge me, and you haven't come to challenge me. Whether or not you will understand this will depend on your luck."

As Su Ming shook his head, he lifted his right hand and stomped on the ground. With it, the platform let out a loud bang, and the heavy weight instantly disintegrated. Chi Ling Wei shuddered, and a look as if he knew it was exactly what he had expected appeared in his eyes. He staggered a few steps backwards while his Qi and blood surged. A feeling of numbness spread through him.

"I have learned from you. Your Highness, if you have any requests in the future, you only need to send word." A breath later, he recovered, and excitement appeared in his eyes. He wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed towards Su Ming deeply. He left the lotus platform without any hesitation and rushed into the distance.

First, it was Dao Yun, and next was Chi Ling Wei. The two of them had come with goodwill and had shown the willingness to join Su Ming's chamber. Once those words were heard by the people outside, there was a loud buzz among the ten million cultivators around the area.

It was also during that moment that in the area beyond the four planes of Morning Dao Sect, one of the one hundred something Relocation Spots to enter Morning Dao Sect, a long arc was traveling forth at an extreme speed.

In that long arc was an old man. The mighty pressure spreading out from his body made it clear that he had already attained great completion in Solar Kalpa Realm. At that moment, his face was pale, but there were no injuries on his body. However, there was a look in his eyes that made it clear that something had shocked and intimidated him so much that his heart was trembling.

Needless to say, he was the person who was sent to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence by the tanned old man. He had returned, and he brought with him news regarding Su Ming that caused him to shudder.

It was news about True Sacred Yin World that would surely cause the entire Morning Dao Sect to tremble.

1. Salu: 萨鲁 (sa1 lu4), 萨 is only a surname and a short term for Bodhisattva, so it's a transliterate version for this race.

Chapter 1081 Overpowering the Ten Strongest with Brute Strength

At the spot in the center of the nine continents on the first plane used for the Anointment Ceremony in Morning Dao Sect, a piercing light instantly appeared amid the buzzing sounds and uproars in the area once Chi Ling Wei left Su Ming's platform. In that light was a person, and he took a large step forward. With a bang, he stepped onto the platform, revealing his large and bulky figure as well as a powerful mighty pressure.

"Han Ta, Mountain Arriver. Your Highness, please grant me your teachings!" he said in a muffled voice that sounded like a roar. The man's eyes were wide open, as if he was angry. He had a ferocious appearance that exuded a fierce air, and when he spoke to Su Ming, his voice was as loud as thunder.

"Han Ta? Even he came! This fight will definitely be interesting!"

"He's one of the top ten most powerful warriors in the last ten thousand years. Even though he's only ranked tenth, that ranking was not created by Morning Dao Sect. It's based on the bounty arranged by Immortals' Union. Its authenticity is pretty self-evident."

"That's right, I heard that Han Ta is also ranked tenth in the war achievement ranking board in Morning Dao Sect!"

Discussions spread through the area around the platform, and Su Ming cast a glance at the man before him. Without his knowledge, a hint of nostalgia appeared on his face. As he stared at the man, he remembered his third senior brother.

Hu Zi was also like this man. He was an honest and straightforward person, but also ferocious.

'Hu Zi, where are you?' Su Ming shook his head.

A ferocious smile appeared on the man's lips. He was very confident, because he knew that whenever he smiled that way, he would deliver a certain amount of intimidation to others. At that moment, as he smiled in that ferocious manner, he lifted his foot and took a swift step towards Su Ming. When he raised his right hand, he threw a punch, stirring up a loud bang.

He was in Mastery Realm and had mastered the divine ability known as Unmoving. With the idea of using the pinnacle of physical power to make the universe tremble, he would attack with physical power.

A loud bang shot into the air, and the punch seemed to slice through the air, tearing apart a large crack in the air while it swept towards Su Ming.

'If Hu Zi saw someone so similar to him, he'd definitely be very happy.'

Su Ming smiled and also took a step forward. With only physical power as well, he threw a punch forward. When his fist collided with that of the man, a loud bang shot up. The man staggered a few steps back. Su Ming also moved a step back. Blood trickled out of the corners of his mouth. That blood was not because of the man, but due to the injuries Su Ming had sustained in the Striking Lands.

When the man was forced back, his Qi and blood started surging violently due to the tremor from the clash. His body was unable to move even a single inch during that instant.

Su Ming wiped off the blood at the corners of his lips. He then cast a glance at the screen of light covering the lotus platform. With a flash in his eyes, a ray of black light shone around his body and left it with a loud whoosh. That black light was the Light of Extreme Darkness, and at the instant it crashed against the screen of light around him, it distorted before it shattered with a bang, causing everything on the platform to be revealed clearly to those in the area outside.

"How many other challengers are there? Come to me, all of you! You aren't my opponent if you challenge me alone!" Su Ming's voice immediately left the lotus platform and echoed in all the cultivators' ears.

After a short period of silence, long arcs immediately shot out from the crowd. There were seven in total, and they were all using an extreme speed to charge towards Su Ming's platform.

Two of the seven were women while the rest were men. The oldest had a head full of white, and the youngest was a bald boy. As the seven people charged forward, the power that erupted from their bodies showed clearly that all of them... were in Mastery Realm!

The appearance of those people immediately stirred up a powerful uproar and a loud rumble among the cultivators in the area.

"It's those seven. Eight among the ten strongest have appeared..."

"Besides Dao Xuan Yi, who is ranked first and has yet to return from beyond the True World and Ding Jiu Xiao, who is ranked second and who was taken by the War Chamber to defend our world, all of the ten strongest in Morning Dao Sect have appeared!"

"After this battle, there will no longer be any challengers. All those that have a hint of reason in their minds would definitely not challenge Dynast Dao Kong again!"

"But Dynast Dao Kong will definitely lose this battle. He's one up against eight. No matter how high his level of cultivation is, it's useless. Dynast Dao Kong is a little too arrogant... But even if he fails, he has already shocked everyone earlier. His fame will only be second to that of Dao Xuan Yi and Ding Jiu Xiao!"

All the seven people were ranked among the ten strongest. They had intended to fight Su Ming one after another not because they fancied the status of a Dynast, but because they wanted to test his power, and at the same time, they also wanted to test their own power.

At that moment, after they heard Su Ming's words, the seven of them hesitated for a moment before rising up. They instantly turned into long arcs and closed in on his lotus platform. When they landed, they stood beside the man whose gaze was extremely solemn and whose Qi and blood had only just recovered.

"Your Highness, please grant us your teachings!"

With solemn expressions, the seven wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed towards Su Ming. Almost at the moment they did so, the man similar to Hu Zi let out a low growl. When he leaped up, he threw a punch at Su Ming again.

When he did so, his body shuddered. His aura and essence erupted and reached their peak during that moment. His veins popped up. Cracking sounds gathered on his palm, and when he threw his punch forward, the shadow of a gigantic fist appeared in front of him.

At the same time, the bald boy took a few steps back. His eyes shone swiftly, and immediately, two more pupils appeared in his pupils!

Waves of dark light flashed within them, and in his gaze, countless threads appeared on the lotus platform. Those threads were formed by laws. When they landed in his eyes, he raised his hands and swiftly started manipulating the air around him, changing the laws in the area. Because of that, Su Ming immediately noticed a power rejecting him. It was as if his existence did not fit with the area and the universe during that instant.

Soon after, a man and a woman moved and disappeared without a trace. When they appeared again, they were already on Su Ming's sides. The cultivation method the two of them practiced was clearly the same. Their bodies became vague, as if they were existences caught between reality and illusions. It allowed them to avoid most divine abilities, and coupled with their powerful might, plenty of powerful cultivators had died in their hands when they fought against the Immortals' Union.

The old man swung his arm. Immediately, a five-colored light appeared. When nearly one hundred rays shined, they turned into a large number of Enchanted Treasures, as if there would be no end to them. Once they appeared, a powerful, sharp presence spread out from them, and all of them charged towards Su Ming.

The second woman let out a piercing roar. She then split into nearly one hundred copies of herself. They surrounded the lotus platform and let out shrill screams simultaneously. It sounded as if there were voices shouting nonstop in the area, and the hearts of all who heard them suffered sharp stabs of pain. The audience even grew dizzy.

One of the other two remaining people took a step forward, and with a loud bang, his body swelled up. He became much bulkier and turned into a giant of one hundred feet. He took a step forward with Han Ta and rushed towards Su Ming.

The last one was dressed in a large, long robe. At that moment, his robe shone. With a loud buzz, a large number of centipedes with wings flew out from within it. Those centipedes let out hissing sounds and rushed to Su Ming as they covered the sky and earth.

The eight people attacked at the same time, and their monstrous presences surged into the air. Su Ming threw his head back and laughed.

"Those in Mastery Realm have reached the pinnacle of physical power. Besides these two, the six of you have all walked down the wrong path. You reached Mastery Realm, but you still treat yourselves as cultivators. I will... only need eight strikes to defeat all of you!"

Su Ming took a step forward to face off against the giant that was Han Ta, since he had been the first to arrive in front of him. At the instant he closed in, Su Ming formed his fists and threw two punches forward at the same time.

Booming sounds reverberated in the air, and Han Ta coughed up blood. His body tumbled backwards, and the giant fist in front of him shattered.

The giant beside him shuddered. As he was sent backwards as well, his gigantic body was torn into pieces and returned to its original form. The man then coughed up blood.

Su Ming did not stop. He simply allowed the laws in the area to turn into threads to surround him before throwing a punch into the air with his right hand. The air instantly shuddered and all the threads were shattered.

"The pinnacle of power can shake the universe and shatter space itself, much less laws."

The instant Su Ming said those words and his punch landed, not only did he shatter the threads of laws, he also shattered the boy's pupils. The youth trembled, and blood flowed out of his eyes. He coughed up blood and tumbled backwards.

At the same time, Su Ming look to the right and left, from where the man and woman wanted to attack him. He stretched out his arms and threw a punch in each direction. Ripples spread out, and the two were forced out of being between the state of real and an illusion. They fell back in shock.

"And you..."

Su Ming looked towards the person who had released a large number of poisonous centipedes. He clenched his right hand. With a loud bang, a violent gust of wind stirred up. It swept through all directions, and all the centipedes let out terrified screeches. The person who had released them coughed up blood and took a few steps back.

"You too..."

When Su Ming turned around, he seized the air with his right hand, then with another punch, all the Enchanted Treasures which were charging towards him shattered with a bang. Blood then trickled down the lip of the old man who had brought them out, and he immediately retreated.

"You're the last!"

Su Ming raised his right hand, then punched the platform. A loud bang shot up, and a large wave swept outwards through the area from the spot where the fist landed, immediately pushing back the hundreds of clones belonging to the woman who had split herself up before they dissipated to reveal her real body in the distance. She coughed up blood and fell back.

"Not enough, again!"

Su Ming laughed at the sky, and blood trickled down the corners of his lips due to his movements tearing at his injuries, but a powerful desire to fight shone in his eyes.

An unprecedented solemn expression appeared on the eight people's faces. They cast each other a glance before rushing at Su Ming again.

As they fought, a Relocation Rune shone on a continent in the third plane. The old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence walked out from it. With a pale face, he rushed to the first plane with an anxious expression.

He wanted to tell what he'd learned to the sect masters. The news... had shocked him to no end when he'd learned about what had happened. If he was not absolutely certain of it, he would not have believed that Dynast Dao Kong had... stirred up such a shocking storm in Divine Essence Star Ocean!

When he remembered that the sect master who had asked him to head to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence seemed to harbor some animosity towards Dynast Dao Kong, the old man's heart trembled. Even if he had to offend that sect master, he would absolutely not offend that Dao Kong even a single bit!

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1082 Just Say I - Read

Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1082 Just Say I

Chapter 1082 Just Say I

Bang!

The eight people attacked simultaneously, and the power belonging to eight Almighties in Mastery Realm erupted from them. If Su Ming was at the peak of his condition, perhaps he could have fought against such forces, but he was injured now, so it only natural that this fight would be difficult for him.

However, this was before he had learned the Mountain Shifter, the God Slayer Art, and the bald crane had mastered the Light of Extreme Darkness. With these things, even if he was injured, he would still be able to fight with ease even when faced with the eight people while injured!

Amid the loud bangs, Su Ming coughed up a mouthful of blood, but the price of it was that the eight powerful warriors around him coughed up blood as well. In retreat, they felt as if they could not control their Qi and the blood tumbling in their bodies. It was especially so for the two who had just entered Mastery Realm.

They could only be considered at the initial stage, and when they were forced back while coughing up blood, they could no longer suppress their Qi and blood from spreading out through their pores. They were heavily wounded and swept out of the lotus platform.

Su Ming wiped off the blood at the corners of his mouth. He then raised his right hand to seize the air, and the Life Inequity Spear manifested. In an instant, it was covered by a layer of golden light, which was the sign of the God Slayer Art which Su Ming had learned.

"Again!"

Su Ming laughed at the sky. As he spoke, fighting spirit rose in the remaining six fighters. They moved together and activated their strongest divine abilities.

At the instant they charged forward and closed in, Su Ming lifted his right foot and took a step forward. He raised the Life Inequity Spear in his hand and thrust downwards in a very simple fashion. If anyone compared the long spear to a greatsword, then his thrust would have been equivalent to a sword slash!

At the instant he used it, the laws in the area changed. This transformation immediately caused the lotus platform and the entire world around them to become separated, turning their area into a completely different region compared to the world around them. This was the power to cut down laws.

Cutting down the connection between the platform and the world around it was equivalent to cutting down the faint connections of the six people's cultivation bases to the world around them.

This form of interfering with fate was the same as blocking off the flow of a sea, killing it off in that way. It made it difficult for the six people to borrow any shred of power from the world, as if Su Ming had sealed off their source!

At the same time, the six cultivators discovered that when the spear went downwards, it not only cut off their fates, but also played with their senses. Even though it looked like the spear was going downwards, it seemed like it extended before splitting into six parts that landed on their hands. It was as if no matter how many people were in the area, as long as the spear fell, it would definitely hit all of them!

Boom!

The instant the six people's divine abilities collided against Su Ming's spear, he shuddered and staggered a few steps back. He coughed up a mouthful of blood, but two of the six coughed up blood too and were swept backwards. Once they were flung out of the lotus platform, thick blood fog spread out from them. It looked like their whole bodies had erupted with wounds.

Soon after, two of the remaining four people on the lotus platform could no longer withstand the falling spear. As their Qi surged intensely in their bodies, they were flung out as well.

With one swing of the spear, four of the six lost their ability to fight. The remaining two people had turned pale. When they looked at Su Ming, their gazes were filled with indescribable shock.

At the instant the two hesitated on whether they wanted to continue fighting, black light surged into the sky from Su Ming's body before it swinging outwards.

"Light of Extreme Darkness!"

"That's the Light of Extreme Darkness!"

The ten million cultivators in the area immediately let out surprised cries. After all, when Su Ming had used it previously, it was to destroy the screen of light around him. When the screen crumbled, the Light of Extreme Darkness had already dissipated, which was why those beyond the platform could not see it. But now, without the screen, the audience could see what was happening on the lotus platform clearly, and the light spreading out from Su Ming's body was incredibly piercing to the eyes!

All those who saw it immediately trembled. They were outside and already reacting like that, so it was even more so for the two of the ten strongest remaining on the lotus platform at that moment.

Almost the instant Su Ming swept out the Light of Extreme Darkness, the two people started trembling. They stood there, feeling as if they had been frozen. If it was to last for much longer, then they would definitely be injured heavily under the Light of Extreme Darkness, and their minds would be destroyed. In fact, even their souls would sink into eternal slumber from which they could never wake up.

The shadow of death landed on their bodies, but they were powerless to fight against it...

The instant their souls were about to fall into eternal slumber, the Light of Extreme Darkness disappeared.

"I will spare you," Su Ming said with aloofness.

The two people on the lotus platform immediately trembled. Their bodies swiftly recovered, but their faces stayed pale. They wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed to Su Ming before turning around and leaving in a hurry. Su Ming's figure had already turned into an incomparably powerful and invincible existence in their minds. This shadow was like a seed that would prevent them from surpassing Su Ming for the rest of their lives.

With the fight of one against eight, Su Ming's name shook all the cultivators in the area. When standing on the lotus platform, he looked like a war immortal at that moment. This

image turned into a brand that could not be wiped off the minds of the cultivators in Morning Dao Sect.

Su Ming's face while he held the long spear was somewhat pale. He was injured to begin with, and after fighting against the eight people, his injuries became worse. It looked as if he could not even stand firmly on his feet, but he did not care about it. He swept his gaze across the crowd, then cast a glance at Bei Bang.

When Su Ming was about to open his mouth to speak, one of the other nine Dynasts shouted out loudly, not giving him a chance to voice anything.

"Dao Kong, I want to challenge you!" Once he said that, all the other Dynasts focused on them. "Dao Kong, do you dare receive my challenge?!"

"That's right, Dao Kong, since you're so ostentatious and can fight against eight of the ten strongest in Morning Dao Sect, do you dare to fight against us now!"

As their voices rang in the air, four of the direct descendants leapt up and charged toward Su Ming's lotus platform, intending to kill him in one go while he was badly injured.

Bei Bang should have stopped them, but his eyes flashed with light, and he kept quiet, as if he did not see anything.

Besides the tanned old man, the other two sect masters frowned, but when they saw that Bei Bang had turned a blind eye, they cast each other a glance and hesitated.

The tanned old man laughed coldly in his heart. This was something that he wanted to see very much. A glint appeared in his eyes, and in a seemingly casual manner, he cast a glance at the gentle looking middle-aged man, Dao Fa, who was among the nine Dynasts.

Dao Fa was silent for a moment, then took a step forward.

"Dao Kong, do you dare fight against me?!" When his word rang in the air, he derided himself. Doing something like this did not fit his personality... but Dao Kong was too strong. Someone as strong as this was a Dynast, and this created an incredibly great threat to him.

The moment Dao Fa took a step forward, a glint appeared in Dao Lin's aloof eyes, and he too leapt forward. The other Dynasts followed suit.

All the other nine Great Dynasts wanted to fight against Su Ming at the same time. This scene instantly caused various expressions to appear on the cultivators' faces. Some were scornful, some excited as if they were about to see something entertaining, and some were frowning, thinking that this was incredibly inappropriate.

With all sorts of thoughts in their heads, the buzz of discussions immediately rolled through the crowd.

While standing on the lotus platform, Su Ming watched the nine Great Dynasts charging toward him with a hint of derision on their lips. He tightened his grip on the Life Inequity Spear, and sharp stabs of pain traveled through his body. It was the sign that his injuries were acting up.

Yet even so, if Su Ming wanted to, he had the confidence to kill all nine of them in one go.

But when he tightened his grip over the Life Inequity Spear and the nine Dynasts were about to reach him, an incredibly loud sound of air being torn apart suddenly came from the distant sky. This was a sound of a person charging forth at full speed while slicing apart the sky.

It was a piercing howl, and it closed in on them in seconds. The person in such a rush was an old man, the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. He was charging forth incredibly quickly with a disconcerted expression on his face. At the instant he closed in, he was instantly recognized by the tanned old man who had been waiting for him all this while.

The tanned old man saw his expression, and a smile immediately appeared on his face. To him, this was the expression of someone who had discovered something incredibly great in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. This matter was surely the secret behind Dao Kong's level of cultivation increasing by leaps and bounds.

Since the man was so terrified, it was definitely not something ordinary.

The incoming long arc did not catch too much attention at first, but the person in it swiftly charged to the tanned old man. Before even closing in, he began to speak in an anxious voice.

"I have something to tell you, sect master!"

As his voice echoed in the air, Bei Bang frowned. When he was about to say something, the tanned old man behind him laughed loudly and took a step forward.

"Dao Kong was still in the middle stage of World Plane Realm more than a thousand years ago, but after he returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he had become incredibly strong. This is a great fortune for Morning Dao Sect, but I'm curious, just what did he go through to become so powerful and obtain this level of cultivation? I sent someone to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence to find exactly that, and now that person has returned.

"I'm not privy to the information he brought back yet because I wanted to listen to it with everyone! Just what sort of serendipity did Dynast Dao Kong receive in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence?!"

The tanned old man's words were incredibly sinister. The instant he voiced them, he stirred up a lot of attention from the cultivators in the area.

In truth, they had long since been puzzled about this, and even those who had not been wondering about it swiftly registered what was going on.

"That's right. What sort of thing could have made Dynast Dao Kong so strong?"

"Yeah, could it be... Possession? Else, why would his level of cultivation increase by so much in just around a thousand years?!"

"If it's really some sort of serendipity, then perhaps we can try obtaining it as well. After all, now that I think about it, rising our level of cultivation by so much is something that is unimaginable."

Bei Bang's eyes sparkled, and he did not stop the old man. He too wanted to hear... just what Dao Kong had experienced in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence!

"Sect master... I..." The old man in the long arc felt his heart tremble at that moment, and the perturbed, anxious look on his face became even more apparent.

His expression caused the tanned old man to feel a hint of uneasiness, but things had already progressed too far, and he believed in his own judgment. With eyes shining, he said resolutely, "Just say it!"

Chapter 1083 Legend

Those words caused even the nine Dynasts who had arrived on Su Ming's platform to take a few steps back and look toward the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. If this person's words could stir up a large storm, then to them, this would naturally be for the best.

Because of it, perhaps Dao Kong's right as a Dynast could be cancelled, and just like that, a person who posed a threat to them due to possessing the same status would be gone. The fewer threats there were, the better everyone would feel.

After all, the road from a Dynast to the master of True Morning Dao World was filled with trials. The nine people might as well be Dynasts, but in truth, there were three Hidden Dynasts behind the ten Great Dynasts.

Those three had fathomless power, and it was said that each of them was a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, but it was a pity that no one knew who they were. However, based on the rules of Morning Dao Sect, when the ten Great Dynasts appeared, three Hidden Dynasts would definitely be appointed.

However, the Hidden Dynasts also had their limitations. They could not open their own chambers and spread their influence. Because of that, a sort of equilibrium was formed. The reason the nine Dynasts treated Su Ming as a great threat was because he had the right to become a Dynast, but also the power of a Hidden Dynast. This sort of existence was incredibly threatening to them.

Because of that, they believed that as long as they stripped off Su Ming of his Dynast status, he could do nothing even if he had great power. A Dynast never had to practice cultivation in the first place. What they needed was a large number of powerful warriors serving as their followers and the ability to bring more people to their side, resulting a force to be reckoned with!

As long as their people brought them to greatness, no matter how strong someone was, they would definitely submit to them. This was something the nine believed wholeheartedly.

Under their expectant gazes, the divine senses from the cultivators in the area, the great interest which had arisen in the old Bei Bang, and the tanned old man's expression of slight hesitation mixed with trust in his own judgement, the expression of the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence immediately changed. He felt as if he had a tiger by its tail. Instinctively, he did not look towards the tanned old man nor Bei Bang who appeared to have the greatest level of cultivation in the area. Instead... he looked towards Su Ming.

His gaze was filled with reverence and great anxiety. Su Ming's expressionless face caused his heart to tremble. He had a strong feeling that he should rather offend that tanned sect master but not Su Ming.

Most of the ten million people in the area did not see this gaze, but the nine Dynasts on Su Ming's platform could see it clearly. Bei Bang could also see it, and the one who saw it the clearest was the tanned old man. At the instant he saw the respect in his man's gaze, his heart let out a loud thump, and the feeling that something bad was about to happen became incomparably strong.

"Wait..." This time, he spoke without hesitation.

But the moment he started, a resolute expression surfaced on the face of the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. He understood well what he had to do at that moment. Since the tanned old man wanted him to say it, he would say it.

"Many days ago, I was sent by a sect master to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence..." He did not bother with the tanned old man's words. When he spoke, he instantly attracted all the cultivators' attention.

"I was sent to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence to investigate all the things Dynast Dao Kong had experienced while he was there, to find the source for His Highness' sudden increase in power. This was the task I was given, and I had no right to reject it. I could only listen to his orders, so I hope that you will not punish me for it, Your Highness."

As he spoke, he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply to Su Ming. His expression was filled with respect, and there was even fear in it.

This scene instantly caused an uproar among the crowd. Everyone began to listen even more attentively, and a strong wave of curiosity had already stirred up in their hearts.

"Once I went to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, I did not head to the camp where the forces of power from True Morning Dao World were stationed to investigate this matter. Instead, I went to some of my good friends in the other True Worlds which I had befriended while I was a True Guard to understand this matter from another point of view. I even coincidentally ran into some fellow Daoists with whom I was good friends with in the past.

"Through an investigation conducted from various points of view, I might have still been unable to investigate all that Dynast Dao Kong went through in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, but I did manage to find out about three- or four-tenths of it.

"When Dynast Dao Kong entered the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he kept a low profile and did not shine too brightly. His legend started during a great auction held in Black Ink Planet.

"While he was there, Dynast Dao Kong bought a Sacred Constellation Robe and started a grand quest that shocks me even now!

"His Highness went to Divine Essence Star Ocean and went through dangerous trials while he was there. Perhaps you do not understand Divine Essence Star Ocean too well, but I can tell all of you that it is a place filled with serendipities. It is a place where ancient Ancestral Spirits sleep. In fact, there are still living Ancestral Spirits, Antecedental Spirits, and plenty of ancient, primitive tribes over there.

"Everything is possible in Divine Essence Star Ocean which is filled with legendary creatures. Forget His Highness' level of cultivation increasing by leaps and bounds, it wouldn't have been impossible for him to become one of the strongest in one step.

"Only in that sort of environment can a person truly grow, and only in that place can an ordinary piece of metal be turned into a sharp sword!

"I do not know exactly what His Highness went through while he was in Divine Essence Star Ocean—only he alone would—but I'm certain that it was definitely not something an ordinary person would be able to live through. There are things there from which even sect masters would die!

"I also know that Dynast Dao Kong... took part in the activation of the fifth kiln. The fifth kiln is one of the most mysterious places in Divine Essence Star Ocean. Each time it is activated, a sea of fire is stirred up and sweeps through the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean! Perhaps some of you do not understand the might of the fifth kiln, but I can tell all of you that its fire can instantly burn all cultivators under Mastery Realm!

"In fact, even those in Mastery Realm that do not have enough Enchanted Treasures would find it hard to last long in the sea of fire!" The old man's respectful words reverberated in all directions, and a loud wave of discussions was immediately stirred up.

An uproar from ten million cultivators arose, and all of them had shocked expressions due to the old man's words. Some of the people had heard of Divine Essence Star Ocean before and naturally knew why it was so terrifying. They had heard about the fifth kiln before as well, and understood what facing it meant.

In fact, there were even some of them who had been True Guards in the past. The old man's words caused them to fall silent. They knew far more than the others, but exactly because of that, their respect for Su Ming grew even more. It had in fact reached an unprecedented manner.

There were many more who had heard about those things for the first time, but they knew the old man and that he would definitely not lie. Besides, there were few among them who were foolish and couldn't determine whether the old man's words were real or not.

"Dynast Dao Kong entered the fifth kiln when it was activated, and even the weakest among the ones who joined him was in Mastery Realm. While he was with them, amid the numerous dangers, Dynast Dao Kong obtained a great serendipity that had never been known to man before. He also obtained his followers while he was there..."

His words echoed in the air. The commotion in the area instantly became even stronger, and when the people cried out, their voices were filled with astonishment that spoke of them finding themselves in disbelief.

Bei Bang's pupils shrank. When he whipped his head around to look towards Su Ming, what entered his line of sight was the other's indifferent expression.

The tanned old man had already become expressionless. He glared at the old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and powerful killing intent rose in his heart.

The expressions of the nine Dynasts on Su Ming's platform changed, and they took a few steps back simultaneously.

"This is nothing. There is one rumor discussed animatedly in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence right now. It is about... Sir Wu who doesn't belong to any of the True Worlds but who has attached himself to the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. This person is an Almighty in Mastery Realm, and he also entered the fifth kiln when it was activated.

"The rumors are saying that this person has yet to return because he was fighting over a treasure with Dynast Dao Kong, and was then personally killed him. His physical body has become the body of his follower, Flame Fiends' Progenitor!"

At the instant the old man said those words, the uproar in the area became so strong that only loud, booming sounds could be heard.

Bei Bang's eyes shone. He did not speak, but the tanned old man behind him let out a cold harrumph, and with a voice like thunder, he instantly drowned out the waves of sound in the area.

"Nonsense! I've heard of Sir Wu before. He has a strange bloodline, and when he transforms, he becomes incredibly powerful. There is no way he could be killed so easily. Who did you hear this from? How could you treat rumors as if they were real?! If you continue telling us things that are mere gossip, do not blame me for punishing you!" the tanned old man said with harshness.

"What if this was told to me personally by Progenitor Long Hai?!" the old man who returned from the Barren lands of Divine Essence asked without hesitation. He was ready to risk everything.

Once he spoke, the uproar in the area which had been drowned out rose with a vengeance, and it instantly became so strong that the voices seemed endless. The tanned old man's expression changed, and he was rendered speechless.

"Progenitor Long Hai is the Almighty from Morning Dao Sect who has gone missing for years!"

"I heard about this Progenitor before. It's said that he has long since arrived at the state of an Almighty and has a great reputation in True Morning Dao World. I didn't expect that he'd be in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence."

"Progenitor Long Hai... if the old man is the one who said it, then those words are believable!"

As voices in the area formed into incomprehensible noise, the old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence opened his mouth again and uttered the most shocking words since the start.

"When Dynast Dao Kong ventured out of the fifth kiln, he also went to the fifth ocean. While he was there... His Highness was attacked by various tribes and surrounded by ferocious beasts."

The old man jolted, and as he trembled, his eyes were filled with fear.

"When he was there, one of His Highness' followers only executed one divine ability before he destroyed tens of thousands of cultivators. Some of them were Almighties in Mastery Realm, and their numbers were impossible to count..."

"It is said that His Highness' follower... is an Almighty in Life Realm who has nearly stepped into Death Realm!!"

As the old man's words echoed, the entire area fell into dead silence. Soon though, a loud boom erupted from the crowd, formed from countless cries of surprise fusing together into a wave of sound that surged into the heavens.

Chapter 1084 That Person Is Dynast Dao Kong!

"What a load of nonsense!" The tanned old man laughed coldly, then swung his arm as he stared at the person who came back from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence while speaking in an aloof manner.

"Forget what sort of followers Dynast Dao Kong has, how could it be possible that a powerful Almighty like would be willing to become a servant? This is obviously just a rumor! This is the most absurd joke I've ever heard! I didn't ask you to go to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence to bring back all the absurd rumors there. Are you as gullible as a three-year-old child now?!"

"I'd like to know who you heard it from this time. Could it still be that Progenitor Long Hai?" The tanned old man absolutely did not believe that Su Ming could have such an Almighty as his follower.

As he spoke, a hint of derision appeared on his face. If Progenitor Long Hai was still the one who said those words, then the tanned old man could have his say in this. After all, even if Long Hai's words were believable and understandable, with his level of cultivation, as long as it involved Almighties near Death Realm, his status would not be enough to say such things.

Even the old Bei Bang frowned, thinking that this rumor was too over the top. He was himself an Almighty in Life Realm, and he had always stood on top of the others. With how he prided himself in his level of cultivation, he could not imagine himself or a powerful warrior who was even stronger to willingly become Dao Kong's follower.

Even if Dao Kong had extraordinary power and could fight against eight Almighties in Mastery Realm, to Bei Bang, this was still not enough for an Almighty in Life Realm to become his follower. It was just as the tanned old man had said: it was the most absurd joke he'd ever heard!

He was not the only one who thought like this. Practically all the people in the area—the ten million cultivators and the Dynasts—had great doubt in regards to those words.

They did not believe them!

"That's impossible! Even if Dynast Dao Kong's level of cultivation is exceedingly high, this is still impossible!"

"That's right. A person nearly in Death Realm is of incredibly noble status. No matter to which True World they went, they would be an existence akin to someone who could touch the heavens. With one stomp, they could make the universe change. How could someone like that become someone else's follower?"

"It's definitely just a rumor. Looks like we truly can't believe him easily. These rumors are too exaggerated."

The buzz of discussions reverberated in the air. Voices of doubt spread, but Su Ming's expression remained as calm as ever, as if none of the things said had anything to do with him. He only cast a profound look at the person who came back from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

This person had managed to dig out information to this extent in such a short amount of time, which showed just how far reaching were his connections in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. At the same time, it also allowed Su Ming to tell that this person's ability to handle affairs, especially in terms of searching for information, were much stronger than those of other people.

'I suppose you can also consider this a talented person.' A barely noticeable glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

The expression of the old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence turned dark when he was faced with the doubts and distrust from the ten million people in the area. He listened to the buzz by his ears and stared at the cold sneer as well as the contempt on the tanned old man's face.

He remained silent for a moment. When the discussions around him grew even louder, the old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence calmly and slowly opened his mouth to utter a sentence that instantly caused the land to fall into dead silence once again.

"What if this was personally told by Reverend Zi Long from the Fourth True World?"

As the area fell silent, the tanned old man's expression instantly changed. His breathing even quickened. He hadn't expected that the one who said those words... would be the incredibly famous Reverend Zi Long of the Fourth True World!

This person was really famous in the Fourth True World. He was half a step into Fate Realm, and along with the Fourth True World's uniqueness and mystery, he had a great reputation in the other three Great True Worlds. Also... he was the representative from the Fourth True World who was sent to Morning Dao Sect to partake in witnessing the anointing of the Dynasts.

He was bringing a group of people from the Fourth True World and would arrive in True Morning Dao World in a short while!

"Are you certain that these words were spoken by Zi Long?!" Bei Bang's expression swiftly turned stern. He stared at the old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence while he enunciated every single word in his question clearly and slowly.

"Sect master, if you see Reverend Zi Long, then you will know whether this is true or false when you ask him. There is no need for me to lie about this."

Once the old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence spoke with resolution, the silence in the area was immediately broken by an uproar. Discussions of disbelieving as well as shocked voices spread out. The tanned old man had an incredibly sullen expression. As for Bei Bang, he turned around to look at Su Ming who was still standing on his lotus platform.

Su Ming's face was still as pale as before, but he stood in a relaxed, calm, and indifferent manner. Not a single hint of change in emotion could be detected on his face, but the more he acted this way, the more fathomless he seemed.

"What is the name of your follower? Perhaps he is an old friend of mine," Bei Bang said in an unhurried manner after a moment of silence. This was the first time he took the initiative to speak to Su Ming.

In truth, under his seemingly calm appearance, there was a huge storm raging in his heart. Each word of the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence was more shocking than the last, causing all the people in the area, including himself, to be unable to help themselves but feel a sense of disbelief amid their shock.

Su Ming toyed with the Life Inequity Spear in his hand. When he heard the words aimed at him, he smiled and said flatly, "Let him continue. I believe that he is yet to finish speaking. It would be best if we let him finish telling us everything in one go."

Su Ming's smile was flat, but when everyone saw it, they felt as if there was an incredibly malicious air contained within it. It was something that they felt but could not put to words.

Bei Bang narrowed his eyes. He immediately had a feeling that something bad was about to happen.

The tanned old man's heart thumped against his chest while the ten million cultivators in the area immediately stood up to attention. They had a vague feeling that the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence... had indeed not finished speaking!

They were especially certain of it when they saw the old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence shudder instinctively. He had clearly remembered a matter that could stir up a huge storm. It was what caused him to be in a constant state of fear and had even pushed him to make a decision to never provoke Dao Kong.

It did not matter whether it was his act of entering the activated fifth kiln, killing Sir Wu, or having an Almighty who was nearly in Death Realm, when compared to the last matter, all of them instantly became insignificant.

"Besides the things that I've told all of you, there is still one more thing..." The old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence was silent for a moment. Fear appeared in his eyes, along with shock that made him look as if he still did not believe in what he'd heard. His breathing quickened slightly before he spoke again.

"The forces of power from True Sacred Yin World stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence... were destroyed! All the cultivators in that camp... died in a sea of fire!

"Almost all the Almighties in Mastery Realm died. Only the Almighty in Life Realm from True Sacred Yin World acting as a garrison in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence survived, but he did so only because that person who destroyed the world did not want to kill him. If he had wanted to, then even that Almighty in Life Realm would have died a tragic death on the spot. His form and soul would have been destroyed!

"All of you do not know about this just yet, but before long, this matter will shock all four Great True Worlds. Right now, True Sacred Yin World is already seething in rage...

"This is something that has never happened before. Right now, there is practically no one among the forces of power stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence who does not know about this matter. It has already spread to all the other True Worlds through every channel of communication.

"Right now... the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World no longer exist in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence!"

The old man's voice shuddered. When he spoke, there was deep fear in his eyes. Clearly, the scene he saw with his eyes in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence had been deeply ingrained in his memories, and it became something that could not be wiped from his mind.

Once he said those words, the area did not immediately fall into silence. Instead, slowly and gradually, the ten million cultivators fell silent. Their expressions changed drastically, and the sounds of them taking in sharp breaths rose and fell before eventually going silent. The place went as quiet as death itself.

The shock brought by this news surpassed everyone's imagination, causing all the people to be unable to accept what they'd heard. As they tried to imagine this based on the old man's words, they saw a place in which a force of power from a True World served as garrison with an Almighty in Life Realm. They also saw a True World that could fight back even if the alien races invaded en masse. If there was enough time, it would even find itself with reinforcements coming to its aid!

Yet now, that place was destroyed. There was only one possibility for this to happen—someone had to have attacked the place with such power and speed that even those from True Sacred Yin World were unable to come assist the camp. And just like that, a force of power acting as garrison in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence was reduced to smithereens with a bang.

"Could it be that the alien races have invaded?"

"Are we going to go through another great war against Divine Essence Star Ocean?!"

"What's going on?! A True World garrison has been completely destroyed! This is... this is..."

"How could this be possible? If the alien races are invading en masse, then something would have happened to the camps from the other three True Worlds, including True Morning Dao World's."

"Could it really be that the alien races are about to wage war against us again?!"

After a period of silence, a loud, rumbling uproar that surpassed all those that had happened before erupted in the area. The tanned old man's expression instantly changed. In front of him, the old Bei Bang sucked in a sharp breath.

"Which alien race was it? How many people did they deploy? How many tribes were sent out? Who was their commander?" he asked without hesitation. This was such a huge matter that he had to report it to the Council of Sect Masters the moment he

understood everything about it. This was definitely not something ordinary. If the alien races were about to wage war, it would be a huge matter that would involve all four Great True Worlds.

Compared to this, even if Dao Kong displeased him, he could still push this matter back and deal with him later. But the moment he instinctively finished asking the questions, his heart let out a loud thump. His expression turned pale, because he had suddenly remembered that the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence was clearly talking about things concerning Dao Kong just now...

The old man who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence cast Su Ming a terrified glance before his voice reverberated in the area. "It has nothing to do with the alien races..."

"It's not the alien races. There was only one person involved in the destruction of the camp from True Sacred Yin World... A cultivator took away this person's belongings, but due to True Sacred Yin World taking this cultivator's side, they eventually offended the person. He summoned the fifth kiln, and in one go... he... destroyed an entire camp from a True World!"

The old man's voice echoed through the area, and the expressions of everyone present instantly filled with utter shock and astonishment so great that it was like nothing they'd ever felt before.

"He-he destroyed an entire camp of a True World alone?!"

"Who is he?!"

"Is there such a powerful warrior in the universe? And isn't the fifth kiln an item that has no master in Divine Essence Star Ocean? How could it... Huh? The fifth kiln?"

At the instant the discussions rose in the area, there were quite a few sharp intakes of breath. The cultivators whose minds worked a little faster felt their hearts let out a thump at that moment as if it was the last thing they did. Those people turned their heads swiftly, and countless gazes gathered on Su Ming who looked as indifferent as ever.

The nine Dynasts in front of Su Ming sucked in sharp breaths at that moment. In shock, they moved backwards simultaneously, wanting to immediately leave Su Ming's side.

"That person... is Dynast Dao Kong!"

The old man's final sentence caused the world to instantly fall into dead silence. It was almost maddening how quiet everyone became. At that moment, the old man knelt down towards Su Ming.

Chapter 1085 Establishing Might

The instant the old man knelt down to worship Su Ming, the area instantly sank into dead silence again. All of the gazes gathered on Su Ming, and all of them were filled with utmost disbelief and shock, along with great astonishment. The people's minds had turned blank, and loud booms that surged into the sky rang in their heads.

It was as if there was a sentence that was echoing nonstop in all the people's heads at that moment.

"That person... is Dynast Dao Kong!"

Needless to say, it was this sentence which was echoing an infinite amount of times in everyone's head, forming loud booms that were like crackling thunder in the ten million cultivators' minds.

The old man's words, expressions, his trembling body, and the gaze that still had lingering fear in it were all proof that there was not a hint of deceit in his words. He had mentioned Progenitor Long Hai and Reverend Zi Long from the Fourth True World, and their presences made it difficult for anyone to dismiss his claims or call them exaggerations.

But the more it was so, the greater shock the ten million cultivators in the area felt. The tanned old man's face had turned pale at that moment. Even the mind of a powerful warrior like him had went blank. The scene of a single person destroying an entire camp from one the True Worlds kept repeating in his mind, and he could not stop it.

The other two sect masters by his side were the same.

As for Bei Bang, his breathing had become rushed. When he looked at Su Ming, his expression changed. For a time being, he found himself speechless.

Right from the start, Su Ming's expression had been one of calmness. The camp from True Sacred Yin World in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence had been destroyed, and this matter would spread to all four Great True Worlds without doubt. It was something Su Ming had prepared himself to face a long time ago.

It did not matter to him even if this matter was publicized earlier than expected. However, the people who came from True Sacred Yin World to the Anointment Ceremony might show up seething with rage.

To Su Ming, it did not matter whether the others learned of this later or earlier.

At that moment, when the entire area was enveloped in silence, Su Ming cast a glance before himself with an indifferent gaze. The nine Dynasts who had come to his platform were stark pale at that moment. All of them had dumbfounded expressions, as if they

had yet to recover from their shock. After all... the things Su Ming had done were enough to shock and terrify all cultivators.

The instant Su Ming cast his gaze on the nine Dynasts, they shuddered, feeling as if their skin was crawling. Su Ming had seemed like an ailing, injured elderly just a moment ago, but in the blink of an eye, he had turned into an ancient, ferocious spirit. This change was so great that the nine people charged backwards simultaneously without any hesitation. Trembling, all they wanted was to leave the platform.

"Didn't you want to challenge me? Why are you in such a hurry to leave?" Su Ming asked flatly. He took a step forward.

When he was about to attack, the old Bei Bang's expression changed drastically. He moved forward, and with his power of Life Realm, he appeared on Su Ming's platform with a bang to stand between him and the nine retreating Dynasts.

"Dynast Dao Kong, please do not be rash. It is forbidden for Dynasts to fight against each other during the Anointment Ceremony."

Once Bei Bang said those words, he felt slightly anguished in his heart. It wasn't hard to imagine that this Dao Kong would definitely regard him in contempt due to the matter just now, and he sighed. He too knew that he had been slightly biased just now.

However, no matter what, he did not expect that Dao Kong... would have become so powerful in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. This manner of doing things was definitely not something that could be done by an ordinary cultivator. In fact, it would be difficult for even Bei Bang himself to do such a thing. Destroying an entire camp from a True World and taking everyone's lives... Bei Bang suddenly felt that there had to be an unimaginable number of vengeful souls surrounding Dao Kong.

Su Ming cast a cold glance at the old Bei Bang before him. He did not say any contemptuous words Bei Bang was prepared to receive. Instead, he said, "If those nine kneel down and shout my name three times, I will treat this as it had never happened."

When Bei Bang heard his words, for some unknown reason, he let out a sigh of relief in his heart. Dao Kong gave him a fathomless feeling. Even if he looked as if he was heavily wounded at that moment, someone who could destroy an entire camp from a True World stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence was definitely not someone who could be underestimated even when he was severely injured.

It was especially so when he saw Dao Kong's calm gaze. At that moment, Bei Bang became even more cautious. He immediately turned around and swung his arm toward the nine Dynasts.

"The nine of you were the ones who broke the rules first. Kneel now!"

Five of the nine Dynasts knelt down without any hesitation, shivering. Two of the remaining four hesitated, but soon chose to kneel down and worship Su Ming as well.

The remaining two were naturally Dao Lin and Dao Fa. Their expressions had twisted. Blood trickled out of the corners of Dao Lin's mouth, a telling sign that he had gritted his teeth so hard that he had crushed them. Without a single word, he lowered his head and knelt down. The humiliation he suffered shattered all of his pride. When he knelt down, he did not just show submission with his body. Even his soul, his honor, and his pride submitted.

The last one standing was Dao Fa. The gentle look on the seemingly gentle-looking middle-aged man had long since disappeared and become sinister. He glared at Su Ming while standing with his back straight.

"Fa Er, kneel down! Apologize to Dynast Dao Kong!" The tanned old man's expression changed. When he gave his command, he took a step forward, intending to head to the platform.

Yet the moment he lifted his foot, Su Ming raised his right hand. The Life Inequity Spear moved, and was flung with a bang. It flew in a long arc which charged towards Dao Fa.

The instant he flung that Life Inequity Spear forward, Su Ming spoke in an aloof manner. "Zhu You Cai."

This was clearly a name, but no one understood why Su Ming had said it. Bei Bang lifted his right hand, but just as he was about to grab the Life Inequity Spear Su Ming had thrown, his body trembled, and his lifted right hand froze in midair.

A powerful sense of danger had risen in his heart. He could clearly feel a murderous intent coming from a distance and locking down on him. This was a divine sense belonging to someone who was clearly stronger than him and who had almost stepped into Death Realm. If he did anything rash, that person would definitely deliver an attack that would come charging at him like a lightning bolt.

At that instant, Bei Bang thought of the words from the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence had said. Among his accomplishment, he'd mentioned Dao Kong having a person in Life Realm as his follower.

When Bei Bang froze, the Life Inequity Spear charged past him with a bang and rushed towards Dao Fa. The man roared, and the tanned old man charged forward, but his speed could not compare to the Life Inequity Spear's. When a loud bang that shook the skies reverberated in the air, the tanned old man let out a sorrowful cry towards the heavens.

Dao Fa's body was torn to pieces. As blood splattered in all directions, his soul and Nascent Divinity were instantly torn as well. Once they were pierced by the Life Inequity Spear, they were destroyed.

All of this might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, it was over in an instant. Blood gushed in all directions and landed on the eight Dynasts who had chosen to kneel down. It made them shudder, and even Dao Lin's face turned pale and bloodless.

"Dao Kong, how dare you kill my Fa Er!" The tanned old man's face twisted as he roared. He whipped his head around to glare at Su Ming, and a large amount of red appeared in his eyes.

"I won't just dare to kill your Fa Er. If you continue causing a ruckus, I will also dare to kill you right here and right now. You're just a cultivator in Fate Realm, so how dare you act arrogantly before me again and again?"

Su Ming's response to the tanned old man's roars was a string of calm words.

They were like a bucket of cold water that had been poured over the old man's head. He trembled, and was forced to push down the raging anger in his heart. He remembered all that he had heard about Dao Kong in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and that he was a terrifying existence who could destroy an entire True World's garrison. He also recalled how Bei Bang had lifted his right hand as if he wanted to stop Dao Kong, but had frozen for a moment, and how his expression had changed.

But the anger and sorrow in his heart was not something that he could suppress so easily. Yet when he saw Su Ming's aloof gaze once more, he forced down the killing intent which had risen in his heart. He suddenly came to the realization that if he attacked, it would be the same as him breaking the rules in the sect. Dao Kong could then have his follower kill him.

The tanned old man coughed up a mouthful of blood. This was an internal injury caused by him forcing down the madness in his heart. This injury was not serious, but his heart was filled with outrage and sorrow at that moment, and this feeling was something that he had never sensed since he had become a sect master.

"Dynast Dao Kong. Dynast Dao Kong. Dynast Dao Kong."

The eight Dynasts kneeling on the platform, including Dao Lin, all had their heads lowered as they said the three sentences towards Su Ming.

Their dignity had been completely trampled. Their pride as Dynasts was stomped under Su Ming's feet, and after a few vicious stomps, it was completely crushed.

The grievances and humiliation from submission due to fear of death was even worse than death... But there were times when even if one knew that by kneeling they would no longer have any sort of prestige left, they could only kneel, swallowing down their humiliation to survive.

This was also Su Ming's goal. He could accept not killing the eight, but he would then destroy their spirit of being Dynasts in an unseen manner, and he had managed to do it. This was also something that the tanned old man had previously wished to do to him.

When all the cultivators in the area saw this, Su Ming's might had instantly become as great as that of a storm. His might swept through the entire area and became the deepest memory etched into the minds of all the cultivators present.

"Senior Bei Bang, based on your previous words, please heal me."

Su Ming's gaze was calm as he sat down on the lotus platform. When he closed his eyes, he circulated his cultivation base and sucked in a large amount of life force from the platform.

Bei Bang's expression was dark, but the intimidating force was still locked on him. In silence, he sighed in his heart. Dao Kong did not pester him for not stopping the challenge from the other Dynasts, which was already allowing him to avoid humiliation. As he sighed to himself, he had his cultivation base spread out from his body, and the life force Su Ming could absorb instantly became greater.

Chapter 1086 Dao Ocean Trial

Under the gazes of all the people, Su Ming continued sucking the vast life force from Bei Bang, and with the power provided by it, he repaired his cultivation base.

Time slowly trickled by. The life force coming to him was still as vast as ever and did not end. An Almighty in Life Realm had practically endless life force. This was also the reason why Bei Bang had spoken in an arrogant manner before.

Yet slowly but surely, a change appeared on Bei Bang's face. He had a strong feeling that Su Ming was like a bottomless pit. His own life force might be nearly endless, but it seemed that Su Ming's absorption of his life force was also nearly endless.

An hour later, Bei Bang's expression had changed drastically. He had a feeling that his life force could not catch up to the rate of Su Ming's absorption. A feeling of shock that came from the depths of his heart spread through his body. Su Ming was indeed a bottomless pit that could absorb an endless amount of life force.

If that was all, Bei Bang would not have been bothered. He could break off the connection at any time he wanted, but when he wanted to do it, he discovered to his shock that the connection had changed. This was no longer him giving his life force and Dao Kong absorbing it, but had instead turned into... him being forced to deliver the precise amount of life force Dao Kong wanted to absorb.

This was a change between the dominant and subservient positions between them. It might have seemed simple and like it was the same, but it determined the person who had the right to break the connection. The decision was no longer in Bei Bang's hands.

'This... How can this be?! The Rune in this place wasn't designed like this! I don't see any signs of anyone changing the structure of the Rune either! Besides, it's impossible for anyone to be able to change the Rune in such a short period of time.'

Bei Bang's expression changed drastically. As his pupils shrank, a sense of danger filled him.

He could not break off the connection to the lotus platform. The life force in his body was being sucked away without stop, and once it fused with the platform, it was absorbed by Su Ming.

The bald crane was making a ruckus in its smug voice in Su Ming's mind at that moment.

"I'm great, right? Heh heh, the idiot actually dared to fuse his body with the Rune. I know that confidence stems from his life force being nearly endless, which is why he was not afraid of other people absorbing it.

"But this idiot is really unlucky, because he ran into me, this Grandpa Crane. I just needed to move my fingers, and the structure of this Rune was changed. The idiot went from the state of willingly fusing with the Rune to the Rune forcing him to fuse with it, from being able to control the Rune, to becoming its servant.

"Little Boy Su, absorb him, absorb at will! Each breath is one crystal, and I'll provide it to you limitlessly." The bald crane's smug, excited, and enthusiastic voice was brimming with an air of bliss that only it could understand.

When another hour passed, Bei Bang's face had already turned pale. He stared at Su Ming with the shock on his face having turned into anguish. How could he still not understand what was going on at that moment? This was Su Ming taking revenge on him for his previous words and actions.

'What a man... He's one that would definitely take revenge even for the smallest grievance...'

Bei Bang sighed in his heart and closed his eyes. He no longer thought about anything else and just circulated his cultivation base in an attempt to struggle free from the Rune, but the moment he did so, the threatening presence from the distance instantly locked on him again.

The time it takes for one incense stick to burn passed, and Su Ming opened his eyes. By then, Bei Bang's expression was incredibly pale.

Su Ming dissipated the suction force from the Rune on his own accord and stood up.

"Thank you for healing me, Senior Bei Bang."

When he said that calmly, Bei Bang remained silent for a moment before he nodded.

"There is no longer any need to continue. The challenges for the Anointment Ceremony have ended. We will now enter the trial component. The... nine of you are to receive your trials in Dao Ocean located beneath us.

"There are those who are lost from Morning Dao Sect's path within and outside Dao Ocean. Among them, there are powerful enemies of Morning Dao Sect, traitors, as well as those who were punished to sink into Dao Ocean. Once they lost themselves, they became cultivators without their path.

"They can be powerful and weak, and your trials are related to these lost souls.

"Kill ten lost souls, and you will obtain the right to go through the trial. Once you do so, you can activate the trial in Dao Ocean at any moment you want. Based on your achievements, you will be randomly placed into different trial grounds.

"This trial is something that has never happened before. To all of you, this is also a serendipitous event... because this trial is also related to the Immortals' Union. Over the course of one thousand something years, we have fought over one thousand battles against the Immortals' Union, be it small or large battles. Among them were hundreds of small-scale battles, nearly one hundred large-scale battles, and seven super large-scale battles.

"They have been recorded in detail, and a place similar to an illusory land has been created by imitating them. Based on all the different qualifications you all have, you will be sent into continuous battles. When you are there, you are to guide the direction of the battle and change the trend of the fighting. This is your trial.

"Remember this. Even though you cannot be killed in these illusions, all of your actions will be observed by the people here, and they will be taken into consideration for the final result.

"You must also remember that you will not enter these illusions with your own faces, but will change into a normal cultivator from our sect.

"However, you will retain your levels of cultivation. You will be able to use it at will and do whatever you please!"

As Bei Bang's voice echoed in the air, he swung his arm, and a vortex about ten thousand feet big appeared in the air in the middle of the nine continents on the first plane.

At the instant the vortex showed up, roars came from within it. The audience could vaguely see a large number of dark shadows inside, but the moment they touched the vortex, they screamed in pain and tumbled back.

The vortex was connected to the periphery of Dao Ocean, and the shadows were the lost souls there. They wanted to rush out, but had never been able to since the moment they had entered.

"If there are any among you who are terrified, you can give up on the trial. Those who do will immediately have their rights as Dynasts stripped off. Think carefully. In the process of gaining the qualification for the trial... you might die!"

When Bei Bang said those words, he cast his gaze over the eight Dynasts. Su Ming was ignored straight away.

Besides him, some of the eight Dynasts showed hesitation. If Su Ming had not revealed his power and the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence did not bring back such shocking news, they would have definitely not hesitated to go through the trial.

Yet now, before the competition between the Dynasts had even started, it had already ended. They knew that unless an accident happened, there would be no way for them to compete with Su Ming. Because of it, this trial was completely useless to them, and there was even the threat of death lurking in it.

In silence, four of the eight Dynasts chose to give up. They took a few steps back, and with pale faces, not only did they give up on the right for the trial, they also gave up on the right to be Dynasts.

Among the remaining four, Dao Lin roared in his heart. The humiliation he had suffered caused his eyes to turn bloodshot, and he became the first to rush into the vortex. Once he disappeared, the other three also gritted their teeth. They turned into long arcs that charged into the vortex.

Su Ming was the last one. His injuries had mostly recovered by then. With a calm expression, he took a step forward, and drew the gazes of the ten million cultivators in the area on himself. Then, he stepped into the vortex.

Only when Su Ming disappeared did the ten million cultivators in the area let out a shocked cry. It was born from the words the person who had returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, but which had been suppressed by Su Ming's presence.

"True Sacred Yin World will definitely not let this slide! Is the war between Morning Dao and Sacred Yin about to start?!"

"We have the Immortals' Union in True Morning Dao World, and we've also offended True Sacred Yin World. Dynast Dao Kong... truly did something unwise."

The discussions echoed in the air. The tanned old man's sullen expression and Bei Bang's quiet sighs made it obvious that the Anointment Ceremony was slowly deviating from its original course.

.....

Dao Ocean was located at the lowest part of Morning Dao Sect. It was a forbidden land which was divided into two parts—the outer and inner layer. The inner part was sealed all year long. Only the outer part would be opened during special moments. Besides that period of time, all the living were forbidden from entering.

But if there was anyone who truly wanted to enter the place, it was not impossible for them. However, since ancient times, there had never been a case of anyone surviving after they had entered the place of their own accord. Perhaps that was not the case and someone had survived, but this sort of thing was just too rare in Morning Dao Sect.

Dao Ocean's mysteries stemmed from the legend speaking of it existing even before Dao Chen.

It was called an ocean because people could hear the sound of waves when they were there, but when they cast their gazes over it, they found the area to be filled with thick fog. It made the people unable to see the entire place clearly. In fact, even their divine senses would be suppressed.

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. The instant he stepped into the vortex, he appeared in a place shrouded in fog. When he swept his gaze across the area, Bei Bang's words echoed in his head.

The trial was divided into two parts. The first part was to obtain the qualifications, and the second part was the key of the trial.

The beginning should not be very difficult, but due to the strangeness of Dao Ocean, life-threatening dangers could appear at any time.

"I'll be able to obtain the right if I kill ten lost souls, huh? If I can really step into one of the battlefields from the past one thousand something years, then I would want to go to the one where the one-hundred-thousand-foot tall giant appeared, or when that black-robed person appeared and severely wounded Progenitor Tai Shan."

Su Ming remained as composed as ever. With one move, he disappeared into the fog and began moving through the area.

After charging forward for a bit, he suddenly let out a cold harrumph. A withered right hand had appeared behind him without a single sound and charged at his heart. That arm was pitch black, and black smoke surrounded its fingertips. It contained the power of those who were nearly at the later stage of World Plane Realm.

At the instant it came towards Su Ming, he did not move forward to escape, but instead moved back. He lifted his right hand and seized the air behind him. With a bang, he grabbed the incoming arm, and with one fling, he yanked a withered person from the fog.

With a flick of his right hand, a powerful surge of his cultivation base was sent into the person's body, and that person was immediately torn to shreds.

"One."

Su Ming took a step forward and disappeared into the fog.

Chapter 1087 Hu Zi!

"Dynast Dao Lin has already killed seven lost souls!"

"Dynast Dao Han has killed three people."

"Dynasts Dao Kui and Dao Hua have both killed two people respectively."

At the first plane of Morning Dao Sect where the Anointment Ceremony had taken place were five golden names. They were floating above the largest lotus platform, right in front of the ten million cultivators.

The five names were arranged in order, and each one had a different number of light pillars by their side. Dao Lin had seven while the others had differing numbers from three to two.

Dao Kong's name was ranked last, and he only had one light pillar.

Most of the gazes in the area were fixed on his name. However, even after a long period of time has passed, besides that one light pillar which appeared at the start, no others showed up.

After a moment, when the tenth light pillar appeared for Dao Lin, golden light shone beside his name. As it spread out, it turned into a huge vortex. It rumbled, and distorted sights could be seen within it. When they faded away, what appeared before the gazes of the ten million people in the area was a scene that was rather familiar to some of them.

It was a battlefield from seven hundred years ago where tens of thousands of people had fought from the Immortals' Union and Morning Dao Sect.

The scene in the vortex immediately attracted the cultivators' attention. When about a quarter of an hour had passed since then, only Dao Kong was still behind. The other three names had turned into vortices as well, and different battlefields had appeared in them.

The four Dynasts looked incredibly insignificant in their own battlefields, but the trials required them to use their own power to change the results of the battle.

Those who were in battles where Morning Dao Sect had lost had make it so that they win. If they couldn't manage that, they had to at least reduce the number of casualties. If that was impossible as well, they had to make the Immortals' Union pay a bigger price.

As for those in battles where Morning Dao Sect won, they had to amplify the results of the battle and make it so that they achieved an even more perfect victory.

Finally, a second light pillar appeared beside Dao Kong's name. His slow pace gradually led to all sorts of speculations from the cultivators in the area, but no one really knew the truth.

Su Ming slowly extracted the Life Inequity Spear from a corpse while he was at the periphery of Dao Ocean. Before him was a big man with a muscular frame. His dark red, lustreless eyes were wide open. Even after his death, he still stared at Su Ming. Based on the aura remaining on his corpse, it could be deduced that before his death... he had power that was nearly equal to those in Mastery Realm.

Su Ming put away the Life Inequity Spear and turned around with a calm expression. He stepped into the fog to continue moving into the distance. Roars came from the area around him, and barely discernible figures flashed past him, but Su Ming only cast them one glance before turning a blind eye on them. These lost souls did not have sufficient power and would not help him achieve what he wanted.

'Only after killing ten lost souls will I be sent to a random battlefield, but they are differentiated by their sizes and their might. They are most likely determined by the levels of cultivation from the ten people we kill.'

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. Besides the first person he killed being in the later stage of World Plane Realm, he was prepared to kill only Almighties to make up his remaining kills.

After all, based on Su Ming's judgement, the battlefield he wanted to go to was definitely not something ordinary. First of all, it involved millions of cultivators, but this was not the main point. The main point was that the Immortals' Union had sent that black-robed person. The strength of the Art that made it seem like he could extract a moon from a well was able to determine the direction of a battle. It had forced Morning Dao Sect to send Progenitor Tai Shan to handle him.

However, Su Ming had a feeling that besides Progenitor Tai Shan, there were surely some other powerful warriors from Morning Dao Sect lurking around in that battlefield. Su Ming felt great curiosity towards this.

As he moved about in the fog, after about the time taken for an incense stick to burn, his eyes focused on the spot in front of him. There he saw a figure whose ripples of power belonged to those in Mastery Realm.

Without any hesitation, Su Ming charged towards that figure.

Time trickled by like this. Several hours later, the ten million cultivators in the area beyond saw seven light pillars next to Dao Kong's name. The increase was incredibly slow, but for some unknown reason, the crowd felt that there was an oppressive feeling in the seven light pillars, as if... besides the first one, the other six were vastly different from those belonging to the other four Dynasts.

Yet they could not tell what exactly was the difference.

They could not see it, but Bei Bang, the tanned old man, and the other two sect masters knew exactly what it was.

'He's killing the Almighties among the lost souls...' There was a sullen expression on the tanned old man's face, and his eyes were filled with hatred.

Bei Bang stared at the seven light pillars above Dao Kong's name and thought quietly to himself. 'What sharp wit. He found the key for the different battlefields so quickly, and he also found the method to get the battlefield he wants.'

When another four hours passed, Dao Lin as well as the other three Dynasts obtained a certain amount of results in their respective battlefields. It was especially so for Dao Lin. He might have looked like an ordinary cultivator, but based on the number of people he

killed by himself, he became a small faction leader. There were already hundreds of people by his side.

It could be said that he was interfering with the results of the battle in the most simple and straightforward manner.

At that moment, the tenth light pillar finally appeared beside Dao Kong's name. At the same instant, golden light spread out and reached a piercing degree. That light was much brighter than what Dao Lin and the others had possessed. It caused the ten million cultivators in the area to let out cries of surprise.

For not only was the golden light much brighter, the vortex that was formed was also several times larger. Its presence was incredibly striking in the air, and it was nearly ten thousand feet long.

Booming sounds reverberated in the air. The vortex started spinning, and as it did, one of the cultivators in the area immediately voiced their puzzlement.

"Why is Dynast Dao Kong's vortex so much bigger? All of them killed ten lost souls, so why is the disparity so great?!"

"That's right, could it be that someone helped him in the shadows? Or else why would the difference be so great?"

As the discussions reverberated in the air, Bei Bang spoke with dignity and age. With just a few words, he instantly suppressed all the speakers.

"They might have killed the same number of people, but besides the first person Dao Kong killed, the other nine... were all lost souls who were Almighties in Mastery Realm!"

As the cultivators in the area fell silent, Su Ming raised his right hand from a corpse. The body immediately withered and turned into ashes.

'A unique structure. He seems to have been modified by someone before...'

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He was using the power from the Seed of Life Extermination to analyze why the lost souls had become like that. While he was mulling over his thoughts, a gigantic vortex appeared around him. As it spun around with loud, booming sounds, a layer of ripples similar to those of water appeared beneath Su Ming's feet, making him look as if he was standing on a lake. When he lowered his head, he saw a scene on the water.

It portrayed a battlefield, and it was a large-scale battle with nearly five million people involved in it. He swept his gaze across it, then frowned. This was not the battlefield he wanted.

After a brief period of pensive silence, Su Ming took a step backwards and moved out of the vortex. At the instant he left it, the vortex disappeared, and everything returned to normal. Su Ming's eyes sparkled. He fell into deep thought for some time, then turned around and disappeared into the fog.

In the area beyond Dao Ocean, the vortex formed by Dao Kong's name vanished to show his name once more, but the light pillars above it had all disappeared. It seemed like he was redoing the test.

As an uproar raged outside, Su Ming swam at full speed through Dao Ocean. Time trickled by, and several hours later, when he killed another ten people, another vortex appeared beneath his feet. This time, the sound coming from the rotations was even louder. After a moment, the instant ripples appeared on the surface of the water, Su Ming's pupils constricted.

This was a battlefield with more than ten million cultivators participating in it, and at first glance, Su Ming saw a huge figure on the Immortals' Union's side—a colossal figure which was incomparably large. It wasn't one hundred feet tall, but nearly one million feet tall.

When this figure stood in the galaxy, the cultivators beneath his feet were like ants. The giant had his arms crossed over his chest while staring at the million cultivators by his feet with an aloof gaze. There was cold sneer on his lips, and he surrounded by the air of those who saw themselves as supreme.

At the center of his brows were seven stars forming a circle, and it was shining with a bizarre, dark light.

Floating among the cultivators from the Immortals' Union by the giant's side was a seemingly insignificant person dressed in black robes and his face covered. This person was floating silently, not doing anything. It might have been impossible to see his face, but the instant Su Ming saw that figure, the memory of the person in black robes who had appeared near their tribe when he was in Dark Mountain surfaced in his mind.

He had the exact same feeling, but this person was clearly much stronger than the person in black robes which Su Ming had met in the past. The difference between them was like heaven and earth.

'It's this battlefield... No!'

Su Ming's pupils shrank. He felt that something was off. Based on what he remembered, the black-robed person and the giant with the stars at the center of his brows had not once appeared at the same time.

Yet now, they were together. There was only one explanation for that, and it was that this battle... was not the one with which everyone was familiar. Progenitor Tai Shan would not be in it!

Su Ming quickly swept his gaze past the crowd in the scene, and just as he expected, he did not see Progenitor Tai Shan.

He narrowed his eyes. After a moment of hesitation, he took a step forward. But just as he was about to step into the water, his body came to a sudden halt, and he even shuddered for a moment. A ray of excitement that had never appeared before showed up in his eyes, and he stared straight at a large man in the water who stood among the people belonging to the Immortals' Union. He had thrown his head back to roar at the sky, wore a look of nonchalance on his face, and had quite a large number of cultivators by his side acting as his followers!

This man had an honest and straightforward appearance, but at that moment, he had a ferocious look that made him seem as if he was spitting fire from his eyes which were narrowed into a glare. While shouting loudly nonstop, he rushed swiftly into the crowd before retreating just as swiftly, and a presence that no one could stop him began to form around him.

'Hu Zi!'

Excitement appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

Chapter 1088 The Battlefield

Needless to say, that man was Su Ming's third senior brother—the ninth summit's Hu Zi!

In a daze, Su Ming remembered how Hu Zi had brought him along to run amuck with a glare in his eyes when he had just arrived for the first time in the ninth summit. As Hu Zi spoke, he would speak honestly in a loud voice. His words seemed to be still echoing by Su Ming's ears.

A man who loved peeping, who was born with the talent for all things in regards to Runes, who was the manifestation of the Rune over Yin Death Region, and one who through Tian Xie Zi's guidance gained an epiphany regarding the Art for dreams. It... was Hu Zi!

Even though everything that Su Ming saw at that moment was a battle that had happened in the past, the instant he saw Hu Zi, his heart was filled with great excitement.

In all his life, there were few people who had filled his heart with warmth right after he met them no matter how callous he was... and without a doubt, Hu Zi was one of them.

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath and forced down the excitement in his heart. When he took a step forward, he stepped into the vortex resembling the surface of water, and his figure disappeared.

The cultivators in the area outside saw Dao Kong's name once again shine with piercing golden light. This time, the golden light was even more dazzling than the one before, and as it spread out, Dao Kong's name turned into a gigantic vortex.

It was even also larger than the previous one. This time, it was tens of thousands of feet tall, causing the four Dynasts' vortices beside it to be unable to compare with it. In an instant, it attracted all the people's attention.

Soon, a scene appeared in the vortex, and this scene... was of the battlefield which Su Ming had chosen to enter!

Bang!

Su Ming's vision blurred for a moment before it recovered. When it did so, shrill screams of pain and furious roars crashed into his ears, and he found a cultivator from the Immortals' Union in front of him. That person had a sharp sword in his hand, and he instantly charged towards Su Ming at an incredibly quick speed.

All around Su Ming were cultivators from Morning Dao Sect, and they looked to be in a very pathetic state. They fell back, for they could not fight the sword-wielding cultivator charging straight at them.

He lifted his hand, then brought the sword down... and human heads flew into space. Blood splattered all around, and shrill screams of pain filled the area. Su Ming's team was a scattered crowd whose members were swiftly fleeing.

When Su Ming lowered his head, he noticed that he no longer looked as Dao Kong. Instead, he had turned into a middle-aged man with a pale face. He had plenty of wounds on his body, and there was even a huge gash on his chest. There was black blood oozing out of it, and his body was beginning to rot.

The black blood was from some sort of poison. The original possessor of the body Su Ming now occupied had clearly died already, which allowed Su Ming to obtain control. He might seem as if he had been resurrected, but in truth, he just had his soul exchanged.

When Su Ming cast his gaze across the area, he found that he was in a densely packed crowd which had no end. A battlefield with more than ten million people in it could

definitely not be summarized by just saying that there were more than ten million people involved in it.

What did those numbers even say? Even one million people standing together would have a mighty presence. In fact, there were plenty of cultivation planets whose population in their cities did not even reach one million.

The battlefield was so big that it was as large as a city!

Su Ming was currently located to the right of the camp which Morning Dao Sect was defending. He was located far to the side, close to the edge of the battlefield.

As Su Ming observed his surroundings, screams of pain traveled ceaselessly through the air. The cultivators in front of him collapsed with a bang, and the blood that scattered in space merged together to take the shape of a person. Its body soon materialized.

The person appeared bright red as if he was dressed in a blood-red robe, a blood-red mask, and a blood-red cloak. There was cruelty in his eyes, and he slaughtered his way into the crowd where Su Ming was along with the sword-wielding cultivator.

There were not many cultivators beside Su Ming to begin with, and soon, there were only about a dozen of them left. Despair could be found on their faces, and as they moved, they realized that they no longer had any room to retreat.

"Heh heh, I killed nearly one hundred people, so I'll be able to obtain even more achievements. My sword-wielding friend, this time, you won't be able to win against me." The blood drenched person's wild laughter echoed in space, and with a singel move, he rushed into the crowd.

Su Ming's expression was cold. He retreated, not immediately attacking. Instead, as he circulated his cultivation base in his new body, he began to heal it swiftly, especially the wound on his chest. A large amount of black blood was forced out from it, and in just the span of a few breaths, most of his injuries recovered.

It was during this time that the blood-red figure which was clearly lacking in judgement cast his eyes on Su Ming. As he laughed ferociously, he moved and charged over.

"There's one here who hasn't died after being poisoned by Old Monster Venom! Haha, don't blame me now, old friend; it's not my intention to snatch your achievements."

The blood-red figure moved incredibly quickly and instantly closed in on Su Ming. He flung his arms outwards, and the two cultivators by Su Ming's sides coughed up blood. As their bodies exploded with loud booming sounds, blood splattered everywhere. It looked as if it possessed life, and when the blood-red figure flung his arms, the blood instantly rushed towards Su Ming.

There was a cruel look in the blood-red figure's eyes. He could practically see the middle-aged cultivator before him being pierced by his companions' blood as if it was sharp arrows and lost the last traces of life.

But the instant that blood charged towards him, Su Ming lifted his head, and a fierce and cold glare flashed in his eyes. While the blood-red figure was taken aback, Su Ming vanished. As the blood crashed into nothing, Su Ming appeared behind the blood-red figure. He raised his right hand to seize the other's throat before giving it a fierce squeeze. Booming sounds echoed in space, and the blood-red figure collapsed. It turned into countless drops of fresh blood that fled with fear.

Hidden in that blood was the man's Nascent Divinity which was screaming shrilly at that moment.

"This is a powerful warrior hidden among ordinary cultivators!"

But what a pity, the moment his screams echoed in space, Su Ming laughed coldly and swung his right hand casually. Immediately, a rebounding force traveled through the scattered blood with a bang. It caused the blood to lurch once before it turned into fog. Then, it was crushed into nothingness. Even the blood-red figure's Nascent Divinity and soul had been wiped off.

The sword-wielding man's footsteps came to an abrupt halt. His pupils shrank, and without any hesitation, he fell back. His skin crawled, and his heart was filled with shock. To him, a powerful warrior who could destroy Old Monster Blood's body and soul in one hit was at the very least in Lunar Kalpa Realm. This sort of person was not someone he, who was just in the later stage of World Plane Realm, could fight against.

Yet before he could retreat more than a hundred feet away, Su Ming's aloof gaze landed on him. At the instant the man's heart let out a thump, Su Ming had already appeared in front of him. He lifted his right hand and tapped the center of the sword-wielding man's brows, and with a bang, his eyes filled with red. He shuddered, and as if his body was seized by an invisible hand, he was torn to shreds.

'I'm still a little not used to this body.'

Su Ming flung his arm and noticed that it was difficult for his current body to fuse perfectly with his cultivation base, which made him unable to bring out his full power. However, while this might be a problem to other people, Su Ming was not too worried about it.

He was an Abyss Builder, and one of the inborn abilities of the Abyss Builders was Possession. He might not be Possessing someone right now, but the difference from his current situation to Possession was not that great. A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and cracking sounds immediately came from his body. As they echoed in space, the

structures of his body was instantly adjusted to a state where it would suit Su Ming the best.

All of this, including Su Ming killing the two cultivators, was done in an instant, causing the remaining few Morning Dao Sect cultivators around Su Ming to regard him with shock. Soon though, they wrapped their fists in their palms to bow deeply towards him.

Su Ming swept his gaze past these people.

"Who is the commander for Morning Dao Sect in this battle?" he asked calmly.

"It's Sect Elder Kun Lin of the Sect Elder Chamber and Lord Du Mo Tian from the War Chamber," someone from the few remaining cultivators immediately answered respectfully.

Su Ming nodded, then turned around to cast a glance at the battlefield around him before turning into a long arc that charged into the distance. Wherever he went, all the cultivators from the Immortals' Union whom he met found themselves screaming in pain before their bodies were torn to shreds after Su Ming moved past them.

Even though he caused such bloodshed, Su Ming's existence was insignificant in the gigantic battlefield. In fact, there were few who paid any attention to him. After all, in a battlefield with more than ten million people, one person's existence was incredibly negligible... unless he did something so big that he could shake the sky and earth itself!

Su Ming was not interested in changing the direction of the battlefield. If he truly wanted to change it, he could just kill the elder or the lord, whatever their names were. Then, with his power, he could suppress all the people present and have all the cultivators on Morning Dao Sect's side to fight according to his will.

However, Su Ming was more interested in the giant in the distance and the black-robed person beside him than doing something like taking over the role of a commander in the battlefield.

The main reason he chose this battle was because he wanted to take a look at what exactly made the huge giant and the black robed person so peculiar, and also because... before he stepped into this battle, he had seen Hu Zi!

However, the battlefield was as large as a city. It was not easy to search for someone, but if he was determined to do so, Su Ming believed that he would definitely be able to find him.

As Su Ming moved about in the battlefield killing those from the Immortals' Union, he was gradually able to tell that the battle had yet to escalate to a very bad condition. Although he did not know how long the battle had already lasted, right then, both armies were on equal footing. Clearly, neither had brought all of their cards onto the table.

Yet this situation did not last for long. As Su Ming moved about in the battlefield and continued drawing closer to the Immortals' Union, he kept his gaze fixed on the giant who was gazing at all the people in the battlefield with an aloof gaze, and the negligible black-robed person by his side...

Suddenly, a gigantic, long, yellow banner appeared in the direction of the Immortals' Union's camp. It fluttered in space, and hundreds of banners like it appeared in the Immortals' Union side. As they flitted back and forth, an invisible mighty pressure descended on the battlefield.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He knew that the Immortals' Union was about to do something big!

Chapter 1089 I Am the Predecessor of Dao Ocean

The instant Su Ming's pupils shrank, he saw the galaxy above the Immortals' Union's large army distorting, and huge eyeballs swiftly descended.

Each of them were one thousand feet large, and more than one thousand of them had descended in one go. They were covered in blood capillaries and gave a bizarre and crazed air about them. The moment they appeared, all the eyeballs shone with blinding light.

In an instant, more than one thousand long arcs shot out. All of them contained Lightning Destroyers, the entity which remained fresh in Su Ming's memories!

Judging by its might, this was not the Sun Destroying Lightning. It was slightly weaker than the Moon Destroying Lightning too, so it was probably the Plane Destroying Lightning. Still, it could kill all cultivators up to those who had attained great completion in World Plane Realm!

As booming sounds surged into the heavens, numerous shrill cries reverberated in space. There were numerous casualties in Morning Dao Sect's army during that instant.

There was also a long arc charging towards Su Ming. In it were a total of one hundred Plane Destroying Lightnings. As they descended, they spread out above his and landed in the area around him with loud rumbles.

Some of them went for Su Ming, but he remained composed. At the instant the Plane Destroying Lightnings charged towards him, he raised his right hand and swung his arm. Immediately, he seized those bolts, and with a squeeze, the Seed of Life Extermination in his soul dissipated them.

'Completely useless. The blood used to create these bolts of lightning is incredibly mixed.'

Su Ming shook his head. When he loosened his grip, a few drops of faint, golden blood appeared on his palm. However, their light was very dull, and they were all flung off of Su Ming's palm. There was not even a single bit of value in absorbing them.

When the eyeballs sent the long arcs outwards, loud whistles came from Morning Dao Sect's army. Ten figures rose into the air, and the instant they flew out, ten suns of Solar Kalpa Realm appeared behind them!

All of them shone with different light. The ten people were all powerful warriors in Solar Kalpa Realm, and as they charged towards the eyeballs. At the same time, hundreds of people flew out behind them, and hundreds of moons manifested behind them. While they charged forward, the galaxy was illuminated by both the suns and the moons for a time. They created a dazzling light unparalleled in terms of brightness.

The people acted quickly and instantly shifted to the eyeballs. The next moment, loud rumbles surged into the heavens.

Su Ming's expression remained the same. After casting a glance at them, he was about to continue rushing towards the Immortals' Union when his footsteps suddenly came to a halt, and a brilliant, fierce light shone in his eyes.

He saw the seemingly insignificant black-robed person next to the giant in the distance move. The man turned into a long arc that charged towards the place where the eyeballs had appeared.

At the same time, the black-robed man lifted his right hand and tapped the center of his brows before he pushing down at the galaxy beneath him.

Su Ming immediately sensed the galaxy letting out a loud bang, and powerful tremors shook the place. Those tremors came out of nowhere, and many of the cultivators were unable to notice them beforehand. After all, there were few like Su Ming who were constantly paying attention to the black-robed cultivator.

At the instant the galaxy trembled, the edge of the battlefield turned into a gigantic source of light. There were two blinding spots. When they appeared, they spread out in two different directions. This only lasted for the span of a few breaths before they connected to surround the battlefield and form a gigantic circle.

'This is it, this is the well, and he's going to extract the 'moon' from it!'

Su Ming's pupils shrank. He could not sense any laws in the land changing. It was as if what the black-robed person was doing surpassed even the laws. In fact, it could be

said that his Art was beyond Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. This was a divine ability that did not belong to this place, but to places beyond it!

This was why this Art did not stir up any of the laws in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. The black-robed person... was guiding another universe's power without stirring up the laws here so the cultivators from Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos could not notice it.

Bang!

The instant that circle appeared, the tremors in the galaxy became even stronger. If anyone compared it to a huge land at that moment, then the tremors would have been akin to what an earth dragon tumbling about would be like. The ground would be rising and falling without stop.

When the circle appeared, it was as if the place had been separated from the galaxy around it. If anyone looked from a higher spot, they would be able to see clearly that the battlefield had begun to resemble a huge well, and the galaxy around it was the land that served as a background for it.

By then, the black-robed person had already closed in on the eyeballs. A cold harrumph came from Morning Dao Sect's army, and a long arc that could not be seen with the naked eye charged towards the black-robed person. It was... an old Almighty. That old man had graying hair, and there were no laws of fate about him. He was an Almighty in Mastery Realm.

He was so quick that he instantly closed in on the black-robed person, but during that instant, the black-robed person waved his arms. He connected his fingers before himself to form a circle. Without even looking at the old Almighty, he let out a low shout that echoed through the entire battlefield.

There was a strange rhythm to his voice.

"The well is the origin of the galaxy, and the moon is the edge of all lives. With the well as the world, I will gather the mark of the moon. As if they were images reflected in the well, I will retrieve all thine souls, and tis shalt be... Moon Gathering from the Well!"

As his words echoed in the air, the black-robed person swung his arms. A loud boom shot up, and an invisible ripple spread out from the black-robed person's swinging arms. At the same instant, the Almighty in Mastery Realm from Morning Dao Sect roared at the heavens. When he lifted his right hand, he pushed swiftly forward.

The galaxy trembled. A gigantic hand that was about one hundred thousand feet big and still growing appeared in the galaxy to push against the incoming ripples and the black-robed person.

"A barbaric power. You did not even understand the celestial origin of Nirvana Realm . What is then the point in only possessing the form?"

The black-robed person shook his head. Even though his expression could not be seen, but based on the words echoing in the galaxy, everyone could hear the contempt in his voice.

When the huge palm from the Almighty in Mastery Realm from Morning Dao Sect collided with the ripples, it dissipated with a bang. The ripples continued spreading out like nothing had happened. The hand disappeared like how snow would melt when it ran into boiling water!

This was dissipation, not collapse. If the palm had collapsed, it would have broken into pieces in a disorderly manner and tumbled backwards, while dissipation was breaking it down until it was reduced to particles...

With a loud bang that reverberated in space, the one hundred thousand feet big palm dissipated. While the old man's in Mastery Realm expression filled with disbelief, his body jolted, and the mark of a moon appeared clearly at the center of his brows!

At the same time, all the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect found the mark of the moon appearing at the center of their brows. A ripple from their souls spread out right away.

In fact, even the powerful warriors from Lunar and Solar Kalpa Realms fighting against the eyeballs could not escape from being marked. It made it seem like all of them were being Branded by destiny.

The moment all of them had the mark of the moon at the center of their brows, the black-robed person raised his right hand. It looked like the circle in the galaxy was truly a well in his eyes, and all the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect who had the mark of the moon at the center of their brows were the reflections of the moon in the well's water.

He lifted his hand and gently scooped up a handful of water as if he was gathering the moon from the well.

All the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect shuddered at the same time. Their eyes bulged out. Immediately, blood capillaries filled their eyes. Their bodies trembled, and their souls were forced out of their bodies through the mark of the moon at the center of their brows!

It was as if the black-robed person did not scoop up the moon, but all the souls of the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect!

Su Ming stared at this scene. He might have heard of the might of the black-robed person from the Immortals' Union, but no matter what, Progenitor Tai Shan had severely

wounded a black-robed person while he fought against him. Because of that, while the black-robed person was a powerful existence in Su Ming's heart, he still had limits to his strength.

Yet now, he discovered that this was definitely not the case. The divine ability released by the black-robed person was not just unprecedented, but something impossible. It could even brand an Almighty in Mastery Realm! The power of his divine ability was definitely not something Progenitor Tai Shan could fight against.

Unless they were not the same people or there was differences in terms of strength between the black-robed people, it would be impossible for Progenitor Tai Shan to injure him badly. After all, Progenitor Tai Shan was only half a step into Fate Realm.

The divine ability the black-robed person executed surpassed Su Ming's imagination. He had never even considered that divine abilities... could be executed this way. The man was neither using laws, but neither was he creating them. Instead, he used... another form of power that was hidden in the universe and had perhaps not been discovered by the people of the four Great True Worlds over the course of countless years!

As Su Ming's heart trembled, everything in the battlefield suddenly came to a halt. This was not an ordinary pause, since the galaxy around him the entire universe and even the black-robed person's divine ability had stopped in an instant.

In fact, Su Ming's body had also lost all mobility. At the same time, an ancient voice echoed in his head.

"This is a battle that occurred 937 years ago in an area northwest of True Morning Dao World. During it, the Immortals' Union sent forth the black-robed man along with the giant spirit that have come from other worlds.

"That black-robed man regards himself as one of the Five Fingers working under the Greatmaster. The giant spirit calls himself... the Ancient God!

"This battle ended when it reached this part. All the powerful warriors, even those from the Sect Elder Chamber and the War Chamber, along with all the disciples from Morning Dao Sect in this land, lost their lives because of Moon Gathering from the Well.

"Honorable Dynast, your trial begins now. The black-robed man before you and that Ancient God have died, and their corpses have been brought to Dao Ocean and have fused with me. Their memories are in my control. You are free to do as you please. Survive their divine abilities, change the tide of battle, kill the black-robed man, or kill the Ancient God—if you complete any of these, you will complete your trial.

"If you accomplish all four of them, you will obtain the right to train in any battlefield you wish in Dao Ocean. Those who have obtained this right from over ten thousand years

ago are no longer considered to retain this right, and no one has obtained this right within the last ten thousand years."

"Who are you?!" Su Ming immediately sent his divine thought forward.

"I am the predecessor of Dao Ocean. I was born before the four Great True Worlds and am one of the Three Heathens and Four Predecessors."

1. Nirvana Realm: Think this might be related to Nirvana Shattering Realm in RI chapter 440, but there was one character missing in mine here. Also celestial origin is another term shared in between universes.

2. Five Fingers: From what I can tell here and the future chapters, Five Fingers is actually a ranking system. The more Fingers a Greatmaster has under him, the stronger he is.

Chapter 1090 Battle Against the Black Robed Person!

The instant the ancient voice finished speaking, the world before Su Ming's eyes recovered. Booming sounds continued reverberating in space, and the black-robed man was still fishing the moon from the well. A deadly force of destruction descended on the galaxy.

The souls and bodies of all cultivators from Morning Dao Sect in the area were destroyed by the Art!

When Su Ming saw that there was no way for him to change this results, his eyes shone, and without any hesitation, he rushed out of the encircled area.

He was incredibly distinct among all the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect who could not move and whose souls were mostly forced out of their bodies while they shuddered. He was instantly noticed by the cultivators from the Immortals' Union.

Yet they only saw an afterimage. When Su Mingu used most of his power, he was so quick that he instantly rushed into the area above the galaxy, beyond where the eyeballs were, but right where the black-robed man stood.

The black-robed man's eyes shrank slightly under the hood. Clearly, he did not expect that there would actually be someone who would be unaffected by his divine ability. The aura spreading out from Su Ming's body also made him feel as if he was facing off his mortal enemy.

This might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but it had ended very quickly. The instant Su Ming rushed out, he seized space with his right hand, and

the Life Inequity Spear appeared there. Once he held it in his hand, he threw it at the black-robed man.

The Life Inequity Spear turned into a long arc, and at a speed faster than Su Ming's, it shot through space toward the black-robed person. That man did not move a single step backwards, but he did stop his act of fishing the 'moon' with his right hand and lifted his left hand to point at the incoming Life Inequity Spear.

"Still!"

He only uttered one word, but the Life Inequity Spear immediately stopped ten feet away from him as if an invisible hand had seized it. The spears was unable to move even a single inch.

This scene caused Su Ming's heart to tremble again. However, not only did he not slow down, he became even faster. With a bang, he closed in on the black-robed man and lifted his right hand to throw a swift punch forward.

Immediately, the galaxy around Su Ming distorted, and the laws changed to form the image of a huge fist to hit the black-robed person.

"Another barbaric power."

When the black-robed person spoke, he raised his left hand and casually swung it at Su Ming. The image of the fist immediately dissipated in the same manner as the fist of the old man in Mastery Realm. However, Su Ming's combat abilities was definitely not something to which that old man in Mastery Realm could compare. Even though his fist had dissipated, he instantaneously rushed out of the illusory image and punched the space before the black-robed man.

It was at this moment that the black-robed man's pupils shrank. He quickly raised his left hand and pointed forward. His finger and Su Ming's fist landed in space at the same time, though they were several dozens of feet away from each other.

Loud, booming sounds rose into the air. Su Ming coughed up a mouthful of blood and tumbled backwards. He felt as if his fist had landed on an invisible barrier.

The black-robed man also shuddered and took a few staggering steps backwards. His Art in the right hand, which still remained in the motion of fishing the 'moon' from the 'well', was cancelled against his will, and he too coughed up a mouthful of blood.

"The celestial origin of tremors!" There was disbelief in the black-robed man's voice.

Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes. He rushed forward again, then raised his right hand to point at the galaxy.

"Rockslide!"

The instant Su Ming pointed forward with his right index finger, the galaxy distorted, and huge meteors appeared. They charged downwards with loud, booming sounds, and each of them brought with them a mighty wave of impact that contained Su Ming's power. In the blink of an eye, hundreds of meteors descended simultaneously in the galaxy.

Loud bangs traveled in all directions. The black-robed man retreated, then raised his right hand and pointed at the sky.

"Still!"

The meteors immediately froze, not moving anymore. The black-robed man swiftly formed a seal with his hands before claspng all ten of his fingers together and bringing them in a downwards slash before himself. Immediately, a huge dimensional crack appeared, and like a gaping mouth in the galaxy, it charged towards Su Ming to devour him.

Su Ming did not move back, but advanced. When he neared the gaping mouth, black light swept outwards from his body.

The entire battlefield instantly turned black before recovering the next instant. The gaping mouth in space had frozen, and the black-robed man shuddered before he coughed up blood again. He retreated swiftly while roaring with disbelief.

"Sir Kong Mo's five-colored divine lights, y-y-you..."

The retreating black-robed man could no longer maintain the Art of Fishing the Moon from the Well. As he retreated, the entire galaxy trembled. The marks of the moon on the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect in the area underneath immediately faded away. Their expressions showed that they had regained consciousness, but what awaited them was a crazed slaughter brought by those taking advantage of the situation under swirling blood-red banners from the Immortals' Union.

The number of casualties was devastating. The disciples from Morning Dao Sect who were still recovering could not even put up a fight. For a time, there were many of deaths on their side. The foul stench of blood filled all corners of the galaxy, but soon, as they slowly regained their senses, the battlefield immediately became a real fight once more.

When the black-robed man moved back, the hood covering his face fell off and revealed an ancient face. His sunken eyes were filled with disbelief. Upon fixing his stare on Su Ming, he raised his right hand and seized the space in front of him.

"You will serve as a well!"

Two light spots appeared around Su Ming and encircled him as if a well had been formed.

"Your soul will serve as the moon!"

The mark of the moon appeared at the center of Su Ming's brows. It was incredibly deep, as if it had been branded on his soul.

"With your body and your soul, I will now gather the moon from the well!" the black-robed man roared. He seized space with his right hand. He was had focused a divine ability which could spread through the entire battlefield on Su Ming alone.

A loud bang rang in space, and Su Ming felt his whole body shudder. He had a strong feeling that his soul was being led out from his body by a power he found difficult to resist. At the same time, he also sensed that his connection with True Morning Dao World had been completely severed by the circle formed around him.

This was a power he had never come into contact with before, and it was impossible for him to get a grasp of its origin. When he saw that his soul had gathered at the center of his brows amid the tremors of his body and felt that it was about to be extracted from the mark of the moon, a glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. He knew that everything he did could be seen by the ten million cultivators in the world outside. After all, it was just a trial.

As his eyes shone, the Light of Extreme Darkness rushed out from his body. At the instant the world became dark, a freezing glare appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He might not be able to touch the power of the black-robed man and neither did he have a way to fight against it... but there was naturally a celestial origin in his soul which could fight back.

'Life Extermination!'

The instant Su Ming sent this divine thought forward, the Seed of Life Extermination in his soul immediately erupted with a bang. That eruption was reflected on Su Ming in the form of countless branches crawling out of his body. As they spread outwards, they seemed to collided with the power the black-robed man had used in an unseen manner.

A loud bang rang out, and Su Ming felt a sharp stab of pain in his head. It seemed as if there was a trail of information crawling into his head, but there were only two words there!

"Celestial origin!"

The instant the two words echoed in his head and booming sounds surged into the sky, the power of Fishing the Moon from the Well around Su Ming's body collapsed. The circle around him shattered layer by layer.

This scene entered the eyes of the huge giant in the distance. A hint of surprise suddenly shone in them, but there was a cold sneer on his lips, and he did not show any intention of thinking to help the black-robed man. It was a telling sign that even though they came from the same place, they were not on good terms with each other.

The moment Su Ming walked out from the circle, the black-robed man coughed up blood, and shock appeared on his face. As he retreated, a fierce glare shone in his eyes, and he raised his right hand to point at Su Ming.

"Immobilization Art!" the black-robed man roared.

This was different from how he previously frozen the Life Inequity Spear and how he kept the meteors in place. This time, he had chanted the name of the Art on Su Ming. Clearly, by doing so, the might of the Art would be even greater.

Su Ming was charging forward, but the next instant he felt as if the space around him had turned into mud. His body jolted, and he was immobilized. In fact, even his power started showing signs of being frozen.

This was not the first time Su Ming saw the black-robed man execute this Art, but only when he truly experienced it personally did he understand its might and wonder.

Almost the instant Su Ming was immobilized, the black-robed man laughed ferociously and struck his own forehead with his right hand.

"Water is the origin of all lives. What I have come to understand is the celestial origin of water, and now, with water, I will kill you!" he roared.

The black-robed man then rushed toward Su Ming, and his body and the space around him instantly turned into a tidal wave. A circular area of several hundreds of thousands of feet around him turned into a vast ocean. It roared and rushed at Su Ming with the old man's ferocious face on the tidal wave.

Su Ming's heart trembled. No matter how hard he struggled, it was difficult for him to regain mobility. When he saw that the ocean formed by the old man was charging towards him and that this divine ability was another one of those Arts he had never seen before, a great sense of danger rose in him. A fierce look flashed through Su Ming's eyes.

"Resentful Wei, awaken! Fight for me!"

BOOM!

A huge crack tore the space around Su Ming. A heinous wave of resentful flames spread out, and Resentful Wei, the black horse which had fallen into deep slumber in Su Ming's storage bag after witnessing Su Ming blocking a destructive blow for it to fulfill

his promise, rushed out by stepping on a sea of fire. Its two dragon heads roared, and it charged straight towards the ocean sweeping towards Su Ming.

This was a fight between fire and water, the black-robed man and the Resentful Wei!

Chapter 1091 The Ancient God Appeared

The celestial origin energy was a power that only the cultivators who were not from Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos knew. It was another level of power that was completely different from laws. Su Ming did not understand it. In fact, he had never come into contact with it before this.

However, the celestial origin energy which turned into an ocean when it was executed by the black-robed man caused Su Ming to have a strong sense of danger. At the same time, he also felt that the ocean was incredibly real... as if this was not a divine ability, but truly an ocean!

With the Immobilization Art freezing his body, even his cultivation base had frozen over. While he was fighting against the strange black-robed man, Su Ming felt as if everything served as a hindrance to him. Even though the black-robed man's shock towards Su Ming had far surpassed Su Ming's shock towards him, Su Ming still thought he was difficult to deal with. However, this was not the first time in his life that he had ran into something like that.

He'd had a similar feeling when he was still in the land of Berserkers and fought against the Shamans. At that time, the Shamans' divine abilities were things he had never seen before. When he fought against them, their divine abilities appeared one after another, and they had numerous changes, serving as a huge headache for Berserkers. Even if Su Ming's level of cultivation had been slightly higher than theirs, if he was the least bit careless, he would have also been badly injured.

At that moment, when Su Ming came face to face with the incoming ocean formed by the black-robed man, the first thing that came to his mind was the Resentful Wei. That thought turned into a divine thought, and the moment the Resentful Wei appeared, flames roared and swept through the entire area. With its black body and two ferocious dragon heads, the Resentful Wei rushed out of the sea of fire and charged into the vast ocean in front of him with a low growl.

However, the Resentful Wei was only in Mastery Realm. It could perhaps only put up a bit of a fight against the ocean formed by the celestial origin from the black-robed man... but the its divine ability was that of fire, and it was born to oppose the celestial origin of water. More importantly, the Resentful Wei was not just purely a creature in Mastery Realm. It was... the manifestation of the endless grudges gathered together when all the cultivators in Ancient Wei perished.

In the era where Ancient Wei had long disappeared, the Resentful Wei could be treated as the only living being signifying Ancient Wei's existence.

BOOM!

Fire and water collided. The sea of fire fought against the vast ocean, which resulted in a loud, booming sound that shook the entire galaxy. When it reverberated in space, countless distortions appeared in the sea of fire from the Resentful Wei. The figures might be vague and their faces could not be seen clearly, but the thick waves of resentment spreading out from their bodies caused the color of the sea of fire to instantly turn dark green, just like that of a will-o'-the-wisp.

As fire and water came into contact with each other, countless distorted figures filled with resentment gathered around the Resentful Wei with shrill cries. When it charged forward, they fused with it to turn into a gigantic figure.

That figure looked as if it had grown on the Resentful Wei's body and was one with it. The figure brandished a gigantic scythe, and with an extreme speed, it pounced on the black-robed man's face formed by the ocean.

BOOM!

The moment the scythe in the hands of the huge figure on the Resentful Wei's body crashed against the face in the seawater, the scythe turned into an arc that brought certain death. In the mid of loud bangs, the boundless ocean was cut into two and fell to the sides. As for the face in the seawater formed by the black-robed man, the center of its brows was also cut in half by that one slash, falling into two parts with the seawater.

"What is this power?!" As the seawater fell backwards, the vast ocean vanished without a trace. The black-robed man showed up again. When he coughed up a mouthful of blood, a mark of blood appeared at the center of his brows. He swiftly retreated with disbelief shining in his eyes.

"Cutting through celestial origin... only cultivators in the late stage of Void Realm are capable of that. This... This is..." The black-robed man's face instantly turned pale. As far as he could tell, the black horse with the two dragon heads had definitely not reached the level of cultivation where it could cut through celestial origin. Yet the scene just then was not an illusion; he'd personally felt the shock of having his celestial origin cut.

"I can sense... the presence of Wei from Arid Triad..."

At that moment, the ancient voice from before spoke once more into Su Ming's heart. However, he did not listen to him closely. At the instant the black-robed man retreated, Su Ming regained mobility, the power which had immobilized him having vanished.

Killing intent shone in his eyes. Even if it was a trial, Su Ming knew that there would come a day when he would eventually run into the real black-robed man in the true world. He could fail during the trial, but if he failed in reality, he would end up dead.

'Immobilization Art, celestial origin of water, what skills. I might not understand these Arts, but...'

The killing intent in Su Ming's eyes grew greater. He moved, and the ares on his sides immediately shone, making it hard for others to tell where he was. Afterimages also appeared around him. They would give the black-robed man a headache if he wanted to cast that Immobilization Art on him again.

Su Ming lifted his right hand as he charged forward. When he pointed at the sky, the galaxy behind him distorted. A gigantic moon of three colors appeared there.

Su Ming formed a seal with his hands, then formed the shape of a mountain before him and pushed it at the galaxy.

"Mountain Shifter!"

Su Ming might have also executed the Mountain Shifter Art when he was in Morning Dao Sect's Striking Lands, but at that time, he did not put every ounce of his strength into it. Right then, he executed the Three Mountains Illuminating the Moon to give a further impetus to the Mountain Shifter Art.

The moment Su Ming's voice reverberated in space, the galaxy roared. Mountains appeared with a bang, and they were all the mountains Su Ming had ever seen in his life. There were those from the land of Berserkers, from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, from Divine Essence Star Ocean, and also from Morning Dao Sect. Countless mountains appeared at that instant, and all of them immediately gathered together to form a gigantic mountain that seemed to go up straight into the void itself!

The instant the mountain formed, the pupils of the one million feet tall giant in the distance shrank. When the black-robed man saw the huge mountain, he stunned to his feet. Then, without any hesitation, he turned around, and with the fastest speed he could muster, he fled while stirring up loud whistles in the process.

"Dammit, Mountain Shifter Art! This is the Mountain Shifter Art! There's someone in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos who managed to learn the Mountain Shifter Art! Luo Han, only you Ancient Deities can withstand Mountain Shifter Expanse Cosmos' Mountain Shifter Art with brute force! If you just watch me die under this Art, then I'd like to see how you'll explain yourself to the Sovereign God!"

A great wave of terror washed through the black-robed man's eyes. When he spoke, his voice was low, but there was a hysterical tone hidden in it. Clearly, Mountain Shifter Art had completely stunned him.

The murderous look on Su Ming's face was thick. He pushed his hands downwards, and a loud bang immediately rose into the air. The gigantic mountain went plunging downwards to smash everything.

The galaxy collapsed. The heavens shattered. Laws crumbled. The black-robed man's body broke down as well. No matter how fast he fled, he could not escape, because Su Ming's Mountain Shifter Art contained the power of absolute accuracy contained in the God Slayer Art he had just come to understand.

The black-robed man let out a shrill scream of pain amid the bangs. His body was torn to shreds, but his Nascent Divinity had jumped out before it was ripped apart. As he screamed, he rushed forward, but he still did not manage to escape from the Mountain Shifter Art ramming into him a second time.

BOOM!

When the gigantic mountain fell on him again, his screams went quiet, and the black-robed man's body and soul were destroyed!

Su Ming's face was pale. Blood trickled out of the corners of his mouth. The battle might have seemed simple, but Su Ming had practically used up every ounce of his strength. The entire process had been incredibly perilous.

It was especially so during the final moment. If the one million feet tall giant in the distance had chosen to interfere and attack, Su Ming would have definitely not been able to kill the black-robed man so easily. Yet the giant had only put on a solemn expression and did not show any intention to provide any aid. This was the main reason behind why the black-robed man had died.

"I've long since grown tired of that old man from the Celestial Realm, but since we came from the same place and you killed him, I will kill you. I'll just have you die with him."

Buzzing sounds came from the giant's mouth like thunderous roars. The seven planets at the center of his brows started spinning rapidly. At the same time, the light from stars spread out, and a mighty pressure caused Su Ming's whole body to sink down.

Bang!

The one million feet tall giant took a step forward in the galaxy. The instant his foot landed, a layer of ripples spread out through the area. When the mighty pressure descended, the cultivators from both sides immediately shuddered, and all of them fell back as if they were swept aside by an invisible hand.

The powerful warriors in Lunar Kalpa Realm and Solar Kalpa Realm from Morning Dao Realm retreated among the ripples. The instant everyone was swept aside, the giant

raised his right hand and swept it through the area at his feet. He was so quick that even though he was huge, he still gave off an impression that even if people could see his moves, they could not avoid them. When he swept his hand outwards, he grabbed a cultivator from Morning Dao Sect, and then... right in front of all the cultivators, he threw the captured one straight into his mouth.

Crunching sounds followed after that. After some chewing and swallowing, he finished eating cultivator in his mouth.

"Barbarians like you taste quite good, but none of you have any understanding towards celestial origin, which makes your taste bland. But you'll be different, boy. I want to know how you'll taste like."

The giant grinned. Fresh blood could be seen faintly on his teeth, but compared to his large mouth, that bit of blood looked rather insignificant.

As he spoke, the giant lifted his right hand, clenched his fist, and threw a punch towards Su Ming. It stirred up loud rumbles.

"Aren't you skilled? Come, let me see whether your barbaric power or my power as an Ancient God is stronger."

A loud bang rang out, the sound of a galaxy shattering. The giant's fist looked like a huge meteor when it charged towards Su Ming by drawing a long arc through the galaxy and howling loudly.

Void Realm: From Renegade Immortal Chapter 1227.

Celestial Realm: Mentioned in Renegade Immortal Chapter 267.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1092 The Power of Strength - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1092 The Power of Strength

Chapter 1092 The Power of Strength

Su Ming's pupils shrank swiftly. The giant's body was one million feet tall, and he declared himself a God from another world. He was known by Dao Ocean, one of the Three Heathens and Four Predecessors, as an Ancient God, and just from its body alone, it could be seen that this strange living creature possessed a great strength that Su Ming could not imagine.

Even if it was just his physical strength alone, it would be strong enough to shake the entire universe. The mighty pressure spreading out from his body that formed the

presence of his cultivation base gave him the feeling that he was in Mastery Realm. However, when he identified it in detail, he found that the two auras consisted of completely different elements. It seemed like he was in Mastery Realm, but was not at the same time.

In fact, while this gigantic Ancient God might still be unable to compare to the complete Ecang, the size of his body was enough to cause hearts to tremble.

The incoming punch charged forth like a meteor, stirring up loud roars in its wake. They seemed to be even louder than the cracks of thunder and could shatter the universe and crumble the galaxy. It seemed as if everything in existence would collapse under the punch and that it would be difficult for anyone to put any fight against it.

Powerful fighting spirit shone in Su Ming's eyes. His physical body was powerful, and it had also reached an incredibly terrifying state. In fact, as long as he could snatch his real body back from the Immortals' Union and step into Mastery Realm, then with the Three Mountains Illuminating the Moon, he could instantly step into Life Realm and become an Almighty.

Besides, not only did his body contain the Seed of Life Extermination, he had also become the completed Ecang. Because of it, when he fused with his clones, even the full powered strike from an Almighty in Mastery Realm could not cause too much harm to him.

If he ran into those who were in Fate Realm, then while Su Ming had not yet mastered the laws of fate, he had the Execution of the Three Evils. The fight might be difficult to navigate, but he could still fight toe to toe against such people.

Only those in Life Realm would pose as a threat to Su Ming, but if he summoned the fifth kiln, then so what if his opponents were in Life Realm!

All of this were the basis for Su Ming's confidence. It was the reason behind why he voluntarily stepped into Morning Dao Sect after he returned from True Morning Dao World. Right then, in the face of the Ancient God's punch, fighting spirit appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He lifted his right hand, and when he clenched his fist, he turned into a long arc that charged towards the incoming strike from the Ancient God.

He wanted to see just how strong was the power of the punch that belonged to an Ancient God with seven stars at the center of his brows!

Everything around him was fake, an imitation, which was why Su Ming had the chance to test himself. If he was in the world outside, failure would mean death, but when he was here... Su Ming had nothing to lose!

The crash between the shine of a brilliant moon and a firefly's light, the collision between a tall mountain and shattered stone, the roar of an ocean and a trickling

stream—this was how this shocking scene seemed to the cultivators who had already died in the real world and the ten million cultivators in the world outside spectating the battle!

The breathing of the ten million cultivators in the first plane of Morning Dao Sect quickened at that moment. It was completely silent in the area. All their gazes were fixed on the picture in the gigantic vortex.

There was no longer anyone staring at what the other Dynasts were doing. Even the members of the sect who were good friends with them had unknowingly cast their gazes on Su Ming's battlefield.

It did not matter whether it was Bei Bang, the tanned old man behind him, or the other two sect masters, at that moment, all of them had cast their gazes on Su Ming's vortex. They watched the battle, watched Su Ming kill the black-robed man, and as he closed in on the giant's incoming punch.

Even that tanned old man had a grim expression on his face at that moment. He had already forced down the hatred in his heart. No matter how much he disliked Su Ming and how much he wanted to kill him, he was still a sect master of Morning Dao Sect. Even if Su Ming's current enemy was fake, he still belonged to the Immortals' Union. In fact, due to his status, the tanned old man even knew some things that the other cultivators did not.

He knew that the giant was known as the Ancient God. He also knew that he did not come from True Morning Dao Sect. Instead... he was an invader from another world, a place that was incredibly far away from them!

And Su Ming was currently fighting against that invader. This scene caused the tanned old man to force down his hatred towards Su Ming. No matter how much he hated Su Ming, they were both from Morning Dao Sect, and they were both people living in True Morning Dao World.

He also knew that they had sent out thirteen sect masters to kill the Ancient God with seven stars at the center of his brows during a battle in the past. Two of the thirteen had died, and seven were severely wounded, still in deep slumber. They had paid this sort of price to kill that Ancient God.

They had paid a still steep, but slightly smaller price for the black-robed man. The War Chamber had sent five War Generals, and with the death of three of them, they had managed to kill him.

While all the cultivators in Morning Dao Sect were fixed on the battle, Su Ming turned into a long arc in the vortex and collided with the Ancient God's fist.

Loud booming sounds shook the universe and reverberated through the galaxy. They traveled out of the vortex and shook the hearts of all the cultivators watching in Morning Dao Sect at that moment.

Su Ming had a feeling as if he had crashed into a mountain. His fist trembled, then shattered along with his arm. When the great force crashed into him, even his whole body had been crushed as the bangs rose into the air.

At the same time, the Ancient God with the seven stars at the center of his brows also let out a muffled groan. With a jolt, his huge fist was bounced back. Cracks signaling that his hand was shattering appeared on his fist with loud cracking sounds. As they spread out, they went through his whole arm as well. The Ancient God staggered several steps back and coughed up a mouthful of blood before swiftly lifting his head. A hint of shock appeared on his face.

"What great strength, but this power is still one of the barbarians... Hmm?"

The Ancient God with the seven stars at the center of his brows had only finished half of his sentence before he suddenly trembled. He coughed up blood again, and the cracks that were originally no longer spreading on his right arm let out a loud bang as if a new force had exploded within it. His huge right arm crumbled into pieces.

"The celestial origin of tremors... You managed to understand this sort of celestial origin with a barbarian's body. It's a pity... that you were born in the wrong place. If you were in my homeland, you would have been a prodigy.

"It's also a pity that you have only gained superficial knowledge regarding the celestial origin of tremors and can only execute one tremor. If you understood the ultimate power of nine tremors, then I would not have been your opponent when you delivered that punch."

The Ancient God's words held a hint of pity, but there was an aloof look in his eyes. He took a swift step forward, then raised his left hand and went to seize Su Ming's mangled body. He was clearly intending to fulfill his words from before—to eat Su Ming and see how he tasted.

Su Ming sighed in his heart. At that moment, he was in an illusory state. When his body shattered, his soul, which had entered the body for the trial, had already left. At that moment, he floated in the galaxy and watched the Ancient God's right arm disappear while the giant moved towards the spot where his torn body lay.

Su Ming was also quite shocked. He had finally come to understand the strength of the Ancient God with seven stars at the center of his brows. Su Ming... was not his opponent... but Su Ming was confident that if his physical body had been there, he would not have died from a single punch. He would still have the strength to stand!

Su Ming was also confident that if he could seize back his real physical body, the Ancient God would not have lost just one arm.

However, all of this was just speculation. What concerned the battle, he had survived under the Moon Gathering from the Well and killed the black-robed man. He could complete the trial by finished one of the four requests, and he had completed two.

As he sighed, Su Ming waited to be returned from the illusory battlefield. At that instant, everything before Su Ming's eyes came to a complete halt, just like before, as if the world had been frozen in place. The ancient voice seemed to hesitate for a moment before it slowly resounded in space.

"Your soul... is very strange..."

Su Ming's eyes shrank in a barely noticeable manner. He did not speak.

"There are plenty of inadequacies in the divine ability and power you used to shatter the Ancient God's right arm just now. Seven-tenths of your power spread out when you delivered that punch, and it did not gather together.

"In truth, the difference between you and the Ancient God is not great... He should not have been able to shatter your body with one punch, even if you only had your soul here." When the ancient voice reverberated in the air, Su Ming did not say a word, just stood in silence.

"Similarly, you've trained your God Slayer Art in the wrong manner. It contains the power of slashing, hitting, and tremors, but you have only gained a superficial knowledge of it, and there are plenty of things missing..."

"If you could have had all your power gather in one spot so that it wouldn't spread out, you could have fought toe to toe against the Ancient God. If you gained an even deeper understanding of the power of tremors, then you could have killed that Ancient God.

"Your soul... is very strange... It has a presence with which I am familiar, but I can't remember to whom it belonged. This is a memory from a long, long time ago." There was a hint of sentimentality in the ancient voice as it reverberated in space before slowly falling into silence.

Some time passed before the ancient voice suddenly spoke once more.

"Do you... want to try again?"

Su Ming's eyes swiftly focused. A brilliant shine flashed through them.

"May I?"

"As long as you wish."

"Then I want to!"

When Su Ming's words tumbled out of his mouth, everything in the area instantly started going in reverse. Time looked as if it was flowing back at that moment, and in an instant, when everything returned to normal, Su Ming discovered to his shock that he was back in the battlefield, and the huge fist from the Ancient God with the seven stars came charging towards him like a meteor in the universe.

Everything had returned to the moment before Su Ming attacked.

Light shone brilliantly in his eyes, and the moon of those in Lunar Kalpa Realm manifested behind him. He raised his right hand, clenched it, and moved, turning into a long arc that charged towards the Ancient God's incoming fist.

This time, when he rushed forward, the ancient voice spoke in his mind.

"Focus your mind on your soul, then focus your soul on your arm. Forget about everything else and turn your mind, soul, and body into your fist.

"When your mind becomes your sole focus, you can focus it on your soul, and when you can merge your mind and soul together, you can forget about your body..."

Chapter 1093 Who Created the Ancient God?!

With the sentimental voice only it could muster, the ancient voice mumbled softly, "Sometimes, you need to forget what you've learned so that you can become even more focused..."

The ancient voice's words were all gems. Each word and each phrase caused Su Ming's heart and mind to roar when he heard them. He felt like he'd come to understand something vaguely, but when he mulled over it, he could not get a grasp on it.

As he charged forward, he closed his eyes. He focused all of his mind so that it would not spread out, and while listening to the ancient voice's words, he gradually and intentionally forgot everything. He forgot about how he had turned into a long arc and was charging towards the Ancient God's incoming fist.

All of this might seem simple, but in truth, doing it was incredibly hard. In just the span of a few breaths, a shocking rumble reverberated in the universe.

Su Ming's body jolted. When he opened his eyes, he saw his body shattering, his soul leaving, and the Ancient God with the seven stars in the center of his brows being forced back while his right arm shattered along with a small part of his body.

"Your heart is not calm. You didn't forget everything. Your mind has not fused with your soul... Do you want to try again?" As the area came to a halt, the ancient voice echoed in space once more

"Yes!"

Resolve appeared in Su Ming's eyes. The instant he opened his mouth, time flowed back once more and he returned to the moment of the strike. Su Ming moved, turning into a long arc again. As he charged forward, he closed his eyes and forgot everything except his fist. It was the only thing in his mind.

BOOM!

A loud bang rang through the space. Su Ming's body had shattered completely once more, but the Ancient God with seven stars lost his right arm as well as half of his body. Numerous cracks spread through his body, and when he was forced back, he turned into a bloody mess before shattering.

However, due to his great power and vitality, the Ancient God did not die even though he suffered such grievous wounds. Instead, when he moved back, disbelief appeared on his face.

"It's still not enough. Perhaps... you are not suited to do all this. You cannot learn to forget..." The ancient voice sighed softly. When it reverberated in the air, Su Ming stayed silent for a moment.

"One more time!"

"It will be the last. If you can shatter the Ancient God with one punch, then I will continue helping you adjust the rebound. If you cannot, then you will be sent out of Dao Ocean." With the words of the ancient voice, the world before Su Ming's eyes flowed back and returned to moments earlier.

This time, Su Ming did not turn into a long arc to charge forward. At the instant the huge fist of the Ancient God with seven stars came forward, he sat down cross-legged. When he raised his right hand, the galaxy in front of him distorted, as if a canvas had been formed.

With his mind as ink and his soul as brush, he forgot everything and merged the two together in the canvas in front of him. He forgot himself. He did not close his eyes, but everything in the world before him had already disappeared.

This was a state he had reached in the past. It was the Art of Picture Creation which helped him clear his heart. The method taught to him by Dao Ocean was one that Su Ming was unable learn well, but if it was just about forgetting himself, he could achieve it using another method.

He would clear his mind, then focus it on his soul to fuse them together, thereby forgetting everything about himself. This was what was meant by focusing!

This sort of focus could allow him to gather all the power in his body into one single spot to prevent it from spreading outwards when it erupted. It was similar to painting. If he did not focus and clear his heart of other thoughts, he could not draw.

At that moment, Su Ming did not see the Ancient God's incoming punch and did not hear the light gasp of surprise from the ancient voice. He forgot everything by immersing himself in the canvas. The instant the Ancient God's fist came crashing on him, he raised his right hand with all his willpower and drew one line in space with his index finger.

That one stroke was like a hook, an arc...

It crashed against the incoming Ancient God's fist in space.

Booming sounds echoed through the entire galaxy. Su Ming's fingertip shattered. His hand, arm, body, and the canvas all crumbled at that moment.

However, the Ancient God with seven stars did not move back. Instead, during that moment, his huge fist turned into ashes along with his arm and whole body. Only his head remained to fall back. He might not have died, but the shock which appeared on his face showed how shaken his soul was. He could not imagine how the person who had struggled greatly when fighting against the black-robed man... could make his huge body crumble with just one light swing. The price for it might have been instant death, but to him, this was still unbelievable.

"This is quite a good method. It helped you to gather eight-tenths of your power. All living beings in the universe except for those in Death Realm are unable to have absolutely none of their power spill out but gather in one spot.

"You have already exceeded my expectations by being able to gather eight-tenths of your power. Next, I will tell you how to gain an epiphany in regards to the power of tremors.

"Based on what I have learned from the body of the Ancient God before you, the power of tremors is a form of resistance as well as dissolution. It is just like how you would stir up ripples when you throw a stone into a puddle.

"If you gathered all of your power together, you would not be able to see ripples. However, there would still be deterrent forces. Focusing your power so that it will not spill out is turning your power into a sharp force!

"Rebound is the third form of power formed the instant the power you send out crashes against this deterrent force!

"This is a form of power utilization, and it's not that complicated. They say it is celestial origin, but that is just the cultivators from the other worlds not understanding what they do and giving it a mysterious name. Based on my memories, this utilization of power is common knowledge..."

As the ancient voice resounded in space, the area around Su Ming reversed and returned to the moment before. The Ancient God's fist came charging towards him once more.

"This time, do not choose to forget everything. Instead, treat yourself as a mountain and regard him as a mortal with slightly greater physical strength. Think of him as a mortal using his strength to push a mountain, and the amount of force he uses will be rebounded back to him in the exact same amount.

"This is what the outsiders call the 'celestial origin of tremors'. The difficulty in it lies in you having to deliver multiple rebounds, but nine is not the limit. They say that nine is the limit because these cultivators from the other worlds do not understand it... In truth, there is a fourth form of utilization of power. It is called borrowing power to strike back ."

Su Ming grew more confused with every word spoken by the ancient voice. He felt that what the voice said was logical, but at the same time that he could not wrap his head around it.

The ancient voice sighed softly.

"Oh well. Observe carefully."

After the last words, Su Ming's body shuddered. He could sense a will descending on it and seizing control over it while turning him into an observer. He could no longer control the body, but he could see everything even more clearly.

Soon after, Su Ming saw the will which descended on the body take a step forward while controlling it, charging straight towards the Ancient God's fist coming at them. He instantly closed in, and at the instant he came into contact with the fist, the body stopped and turned his back towards the Ancient God. He raised his right hand and struck his chest fiercely.

"A person's back is the thickest part of the body. It is also the spot which can suffer the greatest impact. Due to its thickness, the rebound will be even more distinct. Observe well," the voice said in Su Ming's head.

The instant the Ancient God's fist rammed against the back, it was as if both parties had delivered a punch with the body acting as the center!

Su Ming could clearly see a destructive power charge into the body when the palm struck his chest. At the same moment, the destructive power from the Ancient God's fist behind him also rushed into him. The two forces crashed against each other, then tumbled backwards together. This led to the right hand of the body controlled by the will to bounce off the chest. The Ancient God behind him shuddered and took a few staggering steps backwards. Once he coughed up blood, his right hand was completely crushed.

Yet strangely, the internal structures of the body Su Ming had used did not suffer much damage. It only trembled.

"Do you understand now? When two forces collide, it does not necessarily mean ruin. There is also a possibility of dissolution and retreat. These are tremors.

"Causing multiple tremors is also easy. Observe well."

When the ancient voice echoed again, Su Ming saw the body controlled by the will turning around to take a swift step forward. The Ancient God with seven stars let out an enraged roar. There was shock on his face as he threw a swift punch with his left hand.

However, the instant the punch landed on the body controlled by the will, Su Ming saw it moving backwards, as if he was going along with the flow of the punch coming towards him. Since his speed and the speed of the fist were the same, he did not suffer much damage. Once the force of the ancient god's punch faded, the body moved forward, and as if he was borrowing the power from the punch, he struck the Ancient God's fist with his palm.

Bang!

The Ancient God shuddered and was forced back. His left arm shattered, and madness appeared on his face. At the instant he was forced back, he threw his head back and let out a roar that shook the entire galaxy.

At the same time, one of the stars on the Ancient God's brows shattered, then another. When four of them shattered in succession, the destruction stopped. The remaining three stars were left incredibly dull.

When the roar which paid the price of the four stars rang out, the galaxy collapsed, the universe shattered, and countless cultivators beneath them collapsed from the tremors.

Even Su Ming's body was sent tumbling backwards and crumbled

"Ancient Gods, they're mysterious existences. I can decipher their power... but it is difficult for me to completely understand their inborn ability on a short notice, but as I continue studying it, why do I find something familiar? It is as if a familiar existence has created... the Ancient Gods!"

1. Borrowing power to strike back: The Tai Chi self-defense principle. You can't seem to hit them, and they seem to never use any sort of strength when they hit back, but it packs a punch and makes you feel out of breath when they hit back. It also hurts when they hit your solar plexus; it hurts like a b*tch.

Chapter 1094 That One Look... 1

"Perhaps someone created the Ancient Gods... This is an old memory. I need to think about it carefully..." the ancient voice mumbled. As it did, everything in the galaxy came to a halt. The Ancient God who had shattered four stars remained frozen with his mouth wide open.

Most of the cultivators in the area also remained in the position of their bodies in the process of crumbling. Not a single hint of life force could be detected in them. The Ancient God's divine ability did not just harm the disciples from Morning Dao Sect, but had also affected the cultivators of the Immortals' Union.

It was a divine ability that did not differentiate between friend and foe. Once it was executed, with the Ancient God acting as the center, everything around him would turn into flying ashes. They would all shatter and dissipate.

The ancient voice sighed softly, and the halted galaxy became muddled and turned into a gigantic vortex. As it spun, not only did it turn the world indistinct, it also sucked Su Ming's soul out from the body and fused him with itself.

Su Ming's vision blurred. When he regained consciousness, he was already back in Dao Ocean. The fog around him turned everything indistinct, but there was a vortex in front of him. It was connected to the world outside. When he looked at it, he could see the ten million cultivators from Morning Dao Sect outside.

Su Ming stood there quietly, then turned his head around to cast a glance at Dao Ocean behind him. To him, the trial had been extraordinary. He understood how to prevent his power from spreading out as well as experienced the method to execute rebound and borrow power. All of them had etched themselves deeply into Su Ming's mind, making it difficult for him to forget them even if he wanted.

The ancient predecessor of Dao Ocean had offered him advice as if he was guiding him. It felt like he had been offered a lesson, and Su Ming wrapped his fist in his palm to bow deeply towards Dao Ocean.

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes when he turned around and took a step forward. He instantly stepped into the vortex, and when he reappeared, he had already returned to the area used for the Anointment Ceremony in the first plane of Morning Dao Sect. Before everyone's eyes, he walked out of the gigantic vortex formed from his name.

Ten million gazes gathered on him. Many voices echoed in the air. The four Dynasts who had chosen to go through the trials with Su Ming had incredibly complicated gazes as they stood by the side.

When Su Ming swept his gaze past the crowd, he closed his eyes to remember everything that occurred during the illusory battlefield. He started swiftly deducing how to use that rebound and power.

Once he had walked out, the gigantic vortex gradually shrank before turned back into the name Dao Kong. With a flash, it then disappeared into thin air.

Only at that moment did the area erupt into an uproar. The ten million cultivators in the area had personally seen Su Ming's performance in the battlefield... including the predecessor of Dao Kong causing the universe to come to a stop multiple times so that Su Ming could fight against the giant with seven stars again and again.

Even though they could not hear the voice of the predecessor of Dao Ocean, the bizarre turning back of time was enough for all who saw to be left in shock.

It was especially so when they'd seen Su Ming's final two strikes. He had turned around in a bizarre fashion and used his back to withstand the giant's punch, causing the giant's right arm to shatter. Then, when the giant delivered another punch with his left arm, it had also been destroyed in a manner that no one in the crowd could understand.

Even though in the end Su Ming's body had shattered as well due to the giant's roar, the shock brought up by the earlier scenes had become the thing everyone discussed.

The buzzing of voices lasted for a long time. While standing on the platform, Bei Bang cast Su Ming a profound gaze before slowly lifting his hand and seizing the air.

With it, the ten million cultivators immediately felt their necks ache in pain, and all of them stopped speaking. The area slowly fell silent.

"Five Dynasts took part in the trials. Dao Kong, Dao Lin, and Dao Hua have succeeded. The other two failed, and their rights as Dynasts are removed."

As Bei Bang spoke, the expressions of two of the four Dynasts by Su Ming's side turned dreary. They moved back quietly and turned into long arcs that left the place.

"The three of you have withstood the challenges and completed the trials. You... will be anointed as Morning Dao Sect's real Dynasts. Now, you have obtained the right to go to the area beyond the Progenitor's isolation grounds where the Progenitor will personally activate the Flourishing Lotus.

"When you walk out of the isolation grounds, besides us from Morning Dao Sect, the people from the other three Great True Worlds will also receive all of you."

When he said that, Bei Bang's gaze landed on Su Ming. Clearly, the complicated emotions he felt were related to Su Ming destroying True Sacred Yin World's camp in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

Soon, True Sacred Yin World would arrive, and they might not settle things so easily. However, this was no longer within Bei Bang's jurisdiction. He had long since reported this to the Council of Sect Masters, but it had yet to form a reply. He had no idea what it would be though.

Once Bei Bang finished his speech, the ten million cultivators in the area immediately cheered, filled the air with a joyful presence. However, not a single hint of delight could be detected within Dao Lin or Dao Hua upon becoming Dynasts. They stood silent, their expressions filled with bitterness and indignation.

Su Ming remained calm. He did not bother himself with the cheers around him and stood with his eyes still closed, recalling everything he'd experienced in regards to the power etched into his mind.

Seven lights of seven different colors shone in the air. They were dazzling, and three of them landed on the Dynasts. Su Ming's was purple. Dao Lin's red, and Dao Hua, who once harbored animosity towards Su Ming and had had Dao Fei Xian fight against him, was orange.

At the same time, a figure gradually appeared in the air above them.

Su Ming had seen this person before. In fact, most of the cultivators in the area had seen him. He was the young man who had read Progenitor Dao Chen's decree and had the last name of Sang.

His expression was indifferent. When he walked out of nothingness, he swept his gaze past Su Ming and the others, and a faint smile gradually appeared on his face.

"Congratulations, Your Highnesses. Please follow behind me. I will bring you to the Progenitor's isolation grounds to activate the Flourishing Lotus and to record what you

believe is the best state of your body. Then, when you are injured badly in the future, you can turn back time to return to that moment when you were at your best."

While speaking, the young man raised his right hand and swung it downwards. Immediately, the seven lights with different colors flowed about and became even more dazzling. In an instant, Su Ming, Dao Lin, and Dao Hua vanished within them. As the lights scattered, they were sent... into Progenitor Dao Chen's isolation grounds.

Bei Bang sucked in a deep breath. When Su Ming and the others were Relocated, he immediately swung his arm and said loudly, "Four saint beasts, push up the sky above the land of the Anointment Ceremony!"

A shocking roar shook the sky and earth and excited the ten million cultivators. The roar had come from the endless Dao Ocean located at the lowest part of Morning Dao Sect.

At the same time, a ray of green light flashed and rose from Dao Ocean. As the roar reverberated in the air, a gigantic Azure Dragon rushed out.

It had a thick, ancient air. When it flew out, the weather changed and the world roared. It was so quick that when it flew up, it rushed past the fourth plane, left the third plane in its wake, shook the second plane, and then flew into the sky of the first plane.

At a spot that seemed to be near the start of nothingness in the area above the nine continents of the first plane, the Azure Dragon, which was hundreds of thousands of feet long, let out a roar at the sky. When it did so, a large amount of azure smoke gushed out from its mouth. It gathered together and formed a continent. The edges of it shone with an azure light which soon spread out and enlarged the continent.

Rows upon rows of tables appeared on it. If one was to count, they came to a total of ten million.

The Azure Dragon lifted the entire continent. When its huge head swept through the area, all the cultivators who came into its field of vision felt their hearts tremble.

Then, the Azure Dragon closed his eyes and stopped moving.

At that moment, roars came from Dao Ocean once more. This time, the one who flew out was a huge Vermilion Bird. Beside it was a Black Turtle with a similarly shocking size. The Vermilion Bird was entirely fire red, just like a ball of shocking fire. As for the Black Turtle, its tail was a tongue, and its head was that of a fierce turtle.

The two beasts roared and flew out together. There was another roar reverberating from another direction. A huge White Tiger flew out from Dao Ocean. It roared at the sky and charged towards the heavens.

The three huge beasts approached the Azure Dragon at an incredible speed. With the Azure Dragon at their center, they roared, and they too formed continents above themselves.

The magnificence of this scene caused the hearts of the ten million cultivators in Morning Dao Sect beneath to tremble. The sky distorted, and figures manifested there. Among them were men, women, the elderly, and the young. However, the presence of age about their bodies clearly showed that they had lived for a long, long time.

The presences of powerful cultivation bases could be felt as well. These people... were all Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death! The greatest of them were three old men. The mighty pressure spreading out from them was so great that it was unbelievable. The three of them were naturally the three Sect Masters in Death Realm who had snapped at Su Ming previously. They were also the strongest people in Morning Dao Sect besides Progenitor Dao Chen, on the surface at least. Their names were Ri, Yue, and Xing.

"Greetings, Sect Masters of the Council of Sect Masters!"

With their hearts trembling, the ten million cultivators worshiped in the direction of the sky. Their roars were like waves of sound.

There were sixty-eight figures behind the three old men. When they appeared, they immediately spread out. They floated above the continents formed by the White Tiger, the Vermilion Bird, and the Black Turtle.

Ri, Yue, and Xing, the strongest three old men in Death Realm, stood on three different continents with calm expressions on their faces. There were twenty-four people on the Vermilion Bird's continent as well as on the Black Turtle's continent. Only the continent belonging to the White Tiger had twenty people.

Bei Bang, the tanned old man, and the two other Sect Masters flew up simultaneously. Then, as if they were going back to their original place, they charged towards the continent of the White Tiger.

When Bei Bang and the other three returned, an imposing voice reverberated in the sky.

"Open the path to True Morning Dao World to welcome our guests from the other three Great True Worlds. We will welcome... our fellow Daoists from the three Great True Worlds together!"

Chapter 1095 That One Look... 2

Bang!

The continent that belonged to the Black Turtle shuddered. The Black Turtle which supported it roared towards the sky, and as the continent trembled, the sky distorted. A gigantic crack was torn swiftly in the air, as if a large, invisible sword had cut through it. Endless bolts of lightning swam in it, and when it spread out, the crack was torn wider apart.

At the same time, in the Fourth True World of the four Great True Worlds within Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos was a galaxy that looked like a vast mass of water. In it were thousands of meteors of various shapes. They floated by themselves, and sitting on each meteor was a cultivator.

They were all very quiet, as if each of them was the same; everyone's expression was filled with sullenness and aloofness. They also exuded a ghastly, grim presence that seemed to come straight from their bones.

This was the mysterious Fourth True World... True Spirit Hell World, which no outsider knew about!

This world was so mysterious that even its name was only known to a small handful of cultivators in the other three Great True Worlds. They would know it, but that would be it. Even if there were people who had visited the other three Great True Worlds, they most likely had never come to True Spirit Hell World!

The difficulty for entering this place was even greater than entering the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Very few people knew the reason behind it, but without a doubt, the mysterious Fourth Great True World was a topic of discussion that the cultivators from the other three Great True Worlds commonly noted.

There were all sorts of guesses, all sorts of rumors, and it was difficult to differentiate which was real and fake.

At that moment, the thousands of cultivators were meditating in silence. Suddenly, the galaxy in front of them let out a shocking roar. A gigantic crack tore through space, lightning swimming in it. Under the booming sounds, the thousands of cultivators in the area swiftly opened their eyes to reveal cold glares.

It was especially so for a middle-aged man dressed in purple right in front of all of them. The inverted image of a purple spark showed up in his eyes. This person was handsome, and if Su Ming was there, he would have been able to recognize him at first glance. Needless to say... he was Reverend Zi Long, the person who had come into contact with Su Ming in the fifth kiln, who had protected him when he was beyond the fifth ocean, and who had left halfway through!

There was an old man dressed in a long blue robe by his side. He looked old, but the ripple of power coming from him surpassed that of Zi Long. At the instant he opened his eyes, that ripple of power spread out.

"Let's go," the old man said faintly after casting a glance at the crack in the galaxy.

Reverend Zi Long immediately voiced his obedience. When he took a step forward, he leapt up from the meteor to the crack. The thousands of cultivators behind him flew out together as well. They turned into thousands of long arcs that charged towards the crack with loud roars.

The old man in blue was the last. With a calm expression, he stepped into the crack.

At the same time, the continents on the White Tiger and the Vermilion Bird roared together in Morning Dao Sect. Huge cracks appeared in the air. At the instant they were torn open, the lightning opened the cracked and connected to... True Sacred Yin World and the Emperor of Abyss' True World!

True Sacred Yin World was a galaxy filled with cold air. There were huge ancient bronze swords in it. They looked as if they were dug out of a giant's grave. The waning and cold presence spreading out from them seemed to resonate with the galaxy.

Compared to the thousands of people from the Fourth Great True World, the people in True Sacred Yin World were much greater in number. If anyone cast a glance over, they would see that the ancient bronze swords were endless. There were nearly one hundred thousand of them, and on each sword were dozens of cultivators, resulting in millions of people.

This sort of army might be nothing to a True World, but if it was used to visit another True World's Anointment Ceremony, it could be seen as... an act filled with hostility.

It was especially so because of the presences of Almightyies among the one hundred thousand ancient bronze swords. There were dozens of them. In fact, there were two old men among them whose bodies were extremely thin. The presence of decay about them was incredibly thick. It looked as if their old eyes could not be opened. However, the mighty pressure spreading out from them was so terrifying that it made the galaxy look like it was trembling.

Next to the two old men was a middle-aged man with his head lowered. If Su Ming could see him, he would definitely be able to recognize him at first glance as well. He was... the Almighty in Life Realm who was initially among the forces of power stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and who in the end had been spared!

At that moment, when he stood beside the two old men, he looked like a junior, and it was a telling sign in regards to how strong were the two old men who looked as if they could not even open their eyes.

Several breaths later, when the galaxy before them was torn open to form a gigantic crack, the lightning swimming in it caused the crack to open wider. No one spoke, but

the ancient bronze swords turned into long arcs, and at an extreme speed, all of them rushed into the crack.

It was as if they were worried that if they were too slow, not all of them would be able to enter Morning Dao Sect, but the instant all of them rushed into the crack, a shocking bang spread out. Under its loud booming, a screen of light appeared inside the crack, preventing a large number of ancient swords from entering.

But during that moment, the two old men who were so old that they looked as if they could not even open their eyes did open their eyes. Within them, dark green light shone. They raised their arms and swung them forward, and booming sounds shook the sky and earth. The screen of light instantly distorted and shattered.

In an instant, a large number of ancient bronze swords rushed into the crack. In the blink of an eye, nearly thirty thousand entered. At the instant the seventy thousand ancient swords behind it were about to enter as well, the screen of light appeared again. This time, a human face had also appeared on it.

It was an ancient face, and it belonged to Sect Master Yue who was one of the three Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing in the Council of Sect Masters in Morning Dao Sect!

"You, Ming, my two old friends. What need is there to be so angry? There are always ways to solve this, unless the two of you are unwilling and are intent to wage a war between True Worlds," an ancient voice said.

You and Ming, the two old men from True Sacred Yin World mentioned by Sect Master Yue, snorted coldly at the same time. However, they did not forcefully tear open the screen of light again. They did not order the remaining seventy thousand ancient swords to forcefully rush in either.

Instead, the two of them swung their arms and swept up the middle-aged man who was previously tasked to fend against the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. With one jump, they charged into the screen of light and instantly fused into it before disappearing without a trace.

The two of them did not truly intend to wage a war between True Worlds. Everything previously was just to show their anger and determination.

At the same time, in a galaxy shrouded in fog within the Emperor of Abyss' True World were Abyss Dragons that shot through the fog silently as it tumbled about. They were moving forward swiftly.

If anyone cast their gazes over, they would find that the fog was like a sea, and the Abyss Dragons were like huge beasts swimming through it. Waves of mighty pressure spread out from one thousand Abyss Dragons. A cultivator sat on each one. All the cultivators were filled with a strange aura of death, but it was not absolute. There was

still life force in them. However, based on their possession of intelligence, these people were not puppets, but living, breathing cultivators.

In front of the group was an Abyss Dragon which was clearly much bigger than the others. There were two people sitting cross-legged on it—a man and a woman. The man was handsome and dressed in black. He had a crown on his head, and even though his face was pale, his eyes shone with a brilliant light, and there was an aggressiveness to him.

Sitting beside him was a woman. She had no expression, but she was incredibly beautiful. She might have been sitting, but her graceful figure could still be seen. She was dressed in a long, purple dress, and there was a hairpin in her hair with several strings of jewels attached to it. They tinkled when they knocked against each others.

She might have been beautiful, but the expressionless face, and especially the dreary and apathetic look in her eyes made her look as if she had lost her soul. Or maybe that that she no longer cared about anything in the world.

All the people who were familiar with her would find it hard to recall that she had been mischievous and capable of bell-like laughter just over a thousand years ago. She had been filled with joy back then and able to make her eyes curl into the shape of crescent moons when she smiled. The cunning look she gave off would often fill her with an air of vitality and spiritedness

In the past, she had been a girl without worry. She was filled with wildness and rebelliousness. Due to her displeasure with her marriage partner, she even took an Abyss Dragon who was slightly foolish and fled from the Emperor of Abyss' True World. In the process of escaping from her marriage though, she had accidentally stepped into a place that changed her fate forever.

Over there, she met a man whose expression was cold, but whom she could not resist provoking. It was a man around whom she hung around and whom she often teased. It was a man... who made her happy, and because of whom she had subconsciously forgotten that she had ran away from her marriage. It was a man... who in the end had let her block an attack... willingly!

All of that was a thousand something years ago. To a mortal, that would be about ten lifespans. They would forget everything about their past in that time, but to the cultivators, while one thousand something years might be long, they would never forget their past. They could only hide all the beautiful moments in their heart and recall it in quiet reminiscence.

One thousand something years could make a cultivator grow, and from being a happy person, they could become expressionless and dead inside.

In the past, the woman had been a flower like her name, a daylily. She bloomed in the rain and smiled happily, persisting in waiting for the sun to appear.

She might still be a flower in the rain. However, it had already lost the dream about sunlight. She no longer smiled or acted boldly. Instead, she had forgotten how to be happy. She no longer waited for the sunlight in the rain... but to wither away.

She sat beside the handsome man with an apathetic expression. The Abyss Dragon beneath them charged into the huge crack that appeared at that moment and headed to Morning Dao Sect, to the True World that was difficult for the woman to forget. It still made her numb heart ached with pain.

The handsome man turned around and smiled slightly before he spoke softly while staring at the woman. "Yu Xuan, once we go through this entrance, we will enter True Morning Dao World's Morning Dao Sect. Even if you just woke up not too long ago, you will surely not have forgotten... Yet the more reluctant you are to come here, the more I will bring you here, my betrothed.

"It is a pity that the person is no longer in Yin Death Region and I have no idea where he has gone. If I could find him, it would be good. I would invite him to our wedding."

1. Yu Xuan: Girl who sold Su Ming, annoyed him to no end, then saved him.

Chapter 1096 That One Look... 3

The woman's heart was clenching in pain, but she still remained expressionless, as if she was already numb to all things in the world. It caused the man's smile to gradually turn dark, and his expression slowly twisted. He seized the woman's throat, and veins popped up on his arm as he glared at her.

"You b*tch, I am the third prince in the Emperor of Abyss' True World. There is nothing that is impossible for me to obtain if I want it. You've humiliated me for one thousand something years. Your escape has caused me to become the laughing stock of the entire Emperor of Abyss' True World, and the other three Great True Worlds also learned about it.

"B*tch, do you know how grave this is? If you wanted to run, I would have been fine with it. This is embarrassing for a girl, and I can understand it, but you just had to get yourself acquainted with a barbarian from a primitive place, and even sacrificed your True Breath of Life for him. You almost truly died because of him, b*tch!"

As the man spoke, his expression continued twisting. He kept a tight grip over the woman's throat, making the woman unable to breathe, but her eyes were still aloof, and

she looked at the man apathetically, as if derision hid in her depths. She did not say a single word.

"Not speaking, are we? To revive you, I've spent a lot of effort pleading my father to save you. I did that so I could ravish you. I want to let you know just how grave of a mistake you've done in the past!

"If that barbarian died, he's lucky, but if..."

"He won't die!" the woman said in a hoarse voice. Her apathetic expression turned cold as she stared at the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

The handsome man laughed loudly, then slapped the woman, the sound of it ringing in space. His action was seen by the one thousand something cultivators from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, but no one spoke. Instead, all of them chose to avert their gazes.

"Haha! You've finally spoken! Not dead, eh? I long for it to be true, that he isn't dead. I want him to live so when I find him, I could make you suffer in pleasure right in front of him." A lascivious look appeared in the handsome man's eyes. Lust burned in them.

"If you aren't worried about the Abyss Devouring Curse, I won't fight back," the woman said flatly. The spot where she was slapped gradually recovered, returning to normal.

When she said that, the man's expression immediately twisted, and he glared at the woman.

"The Abyss Devouring Curse was formed by the souls of your father and your entire race when they died to protect you. It won't be able to protect you for the rest of your life though. If I could have my father slaughter your entire race, then I can make father remove that curse on you as well.

"He has already promised me that once I reach Mastery Realm, he will fulfill one wish of mine. My wish will be you. I will absorb your Primordial Yin so it will stimulate the power of my blood. And once you woke up, you actually managed to nurture the Aura of Abyss!" When the man said that with a smile, he seized the woman's chin and gently moved his face closer to hers before blowing into her ear.

"Wait for me. The day will soon arrive. Since you said that he hasn't died, I will find him. Don't worry, I will." The man laughed and swung his right hand to fling the woman's face to the right. The Abyss Dragon upon which they sat roared and rushed into the vortex in the galaxy.

When the woman's face was flung to the side, a tear that the man did not see was also flung off and disappeared into the vortex. It was brought into True Morning Dao World and flew into the nothingness.

.....

'Is it raining?' Su Ming lifted his head and looked at the sky. It was blue, as if they were in another world. By his side were Dao Lin and Dao Hua, and before him was a towering altar.

The place was so quiet that not a single sound could be heard. Sang, who had brought them, did not pay any attention to them once they entered after him. Instead, he sat at the edge of the altar and quietly closed his eyes to begin meditating as if he was protecting the place.

A drop of rain had fallen on Su Ming's face. It came from the sky, but there was only one drop. It trickled down Su Ming's face and slid beside his mouth, making him taste salt.

There were certain times and certain things in the world that not even cultivators could understand, such as raindrops and tears. They might seem indiscernible, but in truth, when they were placed by someone's lips, they would be able to tell the difference between the flat taste of rainwater and the saltiness of tears.

However, everyone cried, and even if cultivators had reached an unimaginable state, it would still be difficult for them to tell just which tear... belonged to whom.

Perhaps there was a certain level of cultivation that would allow a person to do so, but Su Ming had not reached it.

'It's not raindrop, but a tear.' Su Ming stared at the sky. He could not see a single figure. It had been a teardrop that had been coincidentally flung to their place from somewhere else.

It was as if there was some unseen force that had sent it to Su Ming, or else how could that tear have made its way to him? Why else would it have fallen on his face and cause him to feel the saltiness and astringency of it.

'Whose tear could it be...? Perhaps it is hers...'

Su Ming lowered his head. The thing that appeared in Su Ming's head when he arrived in the area beyond the isolation grounds was no longer uncertainty about Dao Chen's identity, but a... murmur by his ears which he'd heard often when he was younger but which had not reached his ears for a thousand something years. He'd thought he had forgotten it, but in truth, it was a memory deeply buried in his soul.

"Big brother... big brother..."

'My younger sister.'

Su Ming's gaze landed on the altar in front of him. Perhaps it was Dao Chen's isolation grounds, and in Su Ming's memories, he knew that the girl who had called him her big brother had eventually been taken away. Rumors had it that she was sent into Morning Dao Sect.

While he tasted the saltiness on his lips, Su Ming recalled the memory from the time when his soul was still in his real physical body. He'd been swathed in darkness then, and a girl's voice by his ears had accompanied him for years.

She'd called him her big brother, so there was no way he would forget her.

Su Ming stood quietly. He could not tell just what sort of emotion he was feeling at that moment. All the signs made it clear that he could no longer question it any further—Dao Chen... was Su Xuan Yi!

And the younger sister in his memories was the second God of Berserkers' daughter. She had grown with him, but then had been taken away by Dao Chen, which meant that Su Xuan Yi had taken her away.

Su Ming remained silent. He did not know what that girl meant to Su Xuan Yi, and neither did he know why he took her away in the past. However, Su Ming hoped that this was just a mistake in his train of thought.

"Dao Hua, step onto the altar!" Sang opened his eyes and cast his gaze on the middle-aged man named Dao Hua standing by Su Ming's side.

Dao Hua felt his spirits lift. Excitement appeared on his face, and he took a step forward. Once he bowed deeply towards the altar. With fervent ardor and reverence on his face, he walked one step at a time to the altar, fearing that if he moved too fast, he would seem like he was being disrespectful.

When he reached the altar, his body suddenly shuddered and became vague, but it only lasted for the span of a few breaths before he became clear again. Ecstatic joy showed up on his face, and light beam that was one hundred thousand feet tall shone on him. The Flourishing Lotus on his body turned into nine large lotuses, and when they surrounded him, his cultivation base instantly rose from great completion of World Plane Realm to Lunar Kalpa Realm. The moon appeared behind him before it swiftly shattered to form a sun, allowing him to step straight into Solar Kalpa Realm!

"Thank you, Progenitor! Thank you, Progenitor!"

Dao Hua immediately knelt down on the altar and kowtowed several times. The excitement and zeal on his face reached its peak. It looked as if the isolated Progenitor Dao Chen just needed to send one thought to him, and he would perform the task given to him without any hesitation.

After expressing his joy and thanks, Dao Hua immediately moved back in respect to return to Su Ming's side. His face was filled with enthusiasm, as if even Su Ming at that moment would not pose a great threat to him. The strange, shining light in his eyes also made it seem as if there were faint runic symbols in them. This was something he did not possess before he stepped on the altar. Clearly, when he paid his respect to the Progenitor, he had not just obtained the activation of the Flourishing Lotus and a huge increase in his level of cultivation, he had also obtained other forms of serendipity.

While sitting on the altar, Sang called out flatly, "Dao Lin!"

Dao Lin's expression became stern, but he could not hide his excitement. Still, his condition was much better than that of Dao Hua. He sucked in a deep breath, took a huge step forward, and with his unique icy cold presence, he moved to the altar. At the instant he planted his feet firmly on it, Su Ming saw his body shudder, just like what happened to Dao Hua moments before, and his body turned vague.

The time which he spent indistinct was longer. It lasted for about a dozen breaths before he recovered to being corporeal again. The aloof look in his eyes disappeared, replaced by a thick wave of fervent zeal as well as excitement.

His cultivation base erupted at that moment. He had already reached Solar Kalpa Realm before this, so when his cultivation base experienced a burst, the sun he had formed shattered to turn into rain that drenched his body. When it fell on him, Dao Lin threw his head back and roared for a long time. His cultivation base increased with a bang by leaps and bounds... and from Solar Kalpa Realm, he became one of the Almightyies, a powerful warrior in Mastery Realm!

As he roared, cracking sounds came from his body. Not only did his cultivation base increase by leaps and bounds, even his physical body became stronger. The Flourishing Lotus shone, and twelve lotuses appeared to surround him.

"I, Dao Lin, thank you, Progenitor!"

With excitement on his face, Dao Lin knelt down on the ground, just like Dao Hua had done. Once he kowtowed nine times, he got up and wrapped his fist in his palm to bow to Sang. Only then did he return to Su Ming's side with excitement, surprised delight, and an even more complicated runic symbol than Dao Hua's shining in his eyes.

"Dao Kong..." Sang's gaze fell on Dao Kong, and a hint of kindness flashed through his eyes. If no one looked closely, they would have never been able to see it. The only thing they could see would be calmness akin to still water.

Su Ming lifted his head and cast a glance at Sang before walking forward quietly. He did not have Dao Hua's fervent zeal or Dao Lin's excitement hidden under a facade of sternness. Su Ming just calmly forward.

But no one understood just how complicated... and anxious he felt at that moment.

The anxiety was not due to fear or terror though. Instead, it was an indescribable emotion of a son meeting his father whom he had not seen since birth... and was meeting for the first time after many years.

Su Ming was not the only one who felt anxious and felt those complicated emotions... The figure sitting in front of a rattling drum in the dimension connected to the altar while staring at it... felt the same way.

Chapter 1097 That One Look... 4

One step at a time, Su Ming moved up the stairs leading to the altar until he eventually reached the top. He lowered his head and cast a glance at the Rune formed by circles of countless runic symbols formed on the platform beneath his feet.

Silence.

The figure connected to Dao Chen's isolation grounds was silent.

Time slowly trickled by. When the time taken for an incense stick to burn had passed, Dao Lin and Dao Hua's faces filled with puzzlement. Compared to them being able to immediately sense Progenitor Dao Chen's will right after they stood on the altar, Dao Kong did not react in any way. Everything about him was normal.

Deep emotion appeared on Sang's face as he sat by the side and meditated. He sighed softly before he stood up, then without a single word, he swung his arm and swept up Dao Lin and Dao Hua as well as himself out of the area so that they could... leave the place to Su Ming.

When Sang took Dao Lin and Dao Hua out, another dozen something breaths passed before the air around Su Ming suddenly distorted. His body became indistinct, and a vast power came from nothingness, charging towards his Flourishing Lotus, clearly intending to activate the strange powers of the robe.

Yet right when that power was about to touch Su Ming's robe, he lifted his head and took a step back with a cold expression. As his power spread out from his body, it crashed against the incoming vast wave of power.

A loud bang shot up. Su Ming was forced three steps backwards, but he stopped the vast wave of power from activating the robe.

"I don't need you activating it." Su Ming's voice was cold. As he spoke, his eyes shone, and the power to reverse time swiftly spread out from his body. It was Abyss Builders' inborn ability, and the robe could only be activated by it.

It might be known as the Flourishing Lotus, but in truth, the moment Su Ming wore it, he already noticed that the robe was clearly created using Abyss Builders' inborn ability.

If he wanted to activate, he could do so himself.

When the Flourishing Lotus was activated, booming sounds echoed in the air. A dazzling light spread out and turned into eighteen lotuses that surrounded Su Ming, filling the place with flowing streams of light and creating a sight of peerless beauty.

A sigh came from an unseen spot in the air. At the same time, a vast amount of life force descended. It was life force aimed to grant him a serendipity so that his level of cultivation could increase.

In silence, Su Ming took another step backwards.

"Though there might have been quite a lot of times when I was not the one who increased my level of cultivation through training alone, it wasn't like this. Even if it was through external force, I would always have to pay a price, fighting for it with death hanging right over my neck. I obtained my current level of cultivation through various serendipities. Your life force is very precious... I can't have it.

"Goodbye."

Su Ming turned around and walked down the altar. At that moment, there was no longer any anxiety in him, and neither was there any complicated emotions. These emotions had long since turned into resentment.

Deep resentment.

"Ming Er..."

The instant Su Ming turned around and took his third step, a voice spoke into his ear. The voice was very gentle, and it held an apologetic note. The instant it echoed in the air, Su Ming came to a halt.

He closed his eyes, and at the same time, the Rune on the altar suddenly shone. When its light reached a dazzling degree, a power of Relocation swiftly appeared and covered Su Ming in it.

When Su Ming opened his eyes, he was in a secret chamber shrouded in a faint layer of fog. The chamber was very huge, and through the fog, he could see a figure with its

back turned towards him sitting cross-legged. A decaying and ancient air came from that body, along with a dense aura of death.

While standing there, Su Ming could not see the wooden sword and rattling drum placed in front of the man, and neither did he see the figure hidden under the hood staring blankly at the rattling drum with a gaze filled with deep guilt.

If Su Ming could see that, perhaps he would have remembered how he had asked his elder to make one for him when he was still a child and saw his other companions having that toy. On the second day, when his elder handed the rattling drum to him, Su Ming's joy had lasted for several days.

Several years later, when Su Ming grew up and came to love climbing mountains with a new friend in Xiao Hong, he forgot about the rattling drum and threw it aside.

However, he should still remember that the rattling drum was the first toy for which he asked from the elder, and it was also the only one.

When that rattling drum turned about and let out rattling noises, he'd felt like he was the same as his other companions...

The man was silent, and Su Ming was also silent, but in the end, Su Ming was still the one who broke the silence. He sucked in a deep breath and wrapped his fist in his palm to bow at the man.

"I, Dao Kong, greet the Progenitor." His voice resounded in the chamber. There were echoes, and they lingered around for a long period of time, refusing to scatter.

"I am the Progenitor of Morning Dao Sect... but not your Progenitor." After a long time, a hoarse voice came from the figure. Su Ming did not see that the man's hand placed on the rattling drum was trembling slightly at that moment.

"You should be able to tell that with our ability as Abyss Builders and your wisdom as my son. Your return to Morning Dao Sect means that you have already understood this..."

"I am Progenitor Dao Chen, and I am also Su Xuan Yi. I... am your father." In the end, even with an indescribable level of cultivation, the figure's voice still started quivering.

"You jest, Progenitor."

Su Ming remained silent after that. He then shook his head and turned around to walk back. He sent a divine thought to the bald crane, asking it to help him leave this place. He did not want to stay in this place. He absolutely did not want to.

Before he came, Su Ming had imagined what would happen when he met Su Xuan Yi. He had been anxious, filled with complicated feelings, but when he truly met the figure, he noticed that no matter how he thought about it and tried to remain calm, he could not force down the resentment in his heart.

He resented this man. This resentment was so great that he simply could not overlook it.

"You..." The figure shuddered for a moment. Su Ming could not see that the tremors of the hand placed on the rattling drum had become much stronger. Sadness could be seen from them.

"I can make it up to you, Ming Er, you know this. You should know my hardships, I..."

"Progenitor, are you done?" Su Ming stopped and turned around to stare at the figure with a sullen face. A ruthless expression appeared on his face.

"You are you, and I am me. It doesn't matter to me whether you are Dao Chen or Su Xuan Yi. You are you, and I am me! You can continue with your plan, but stop using me as your chess piece! Today, I am not your opponent, but once I've been your chess piece for long enough, I will surpass you.

"You are you, I am me. You have your plans, and I have my own pace!"

Su Ming swung his arm. He turned his head around and took a step forward. Rarely enough, the bald crane did not kick up a fuss or bother Su Ming. Instead, when it noticed that the atmosphere had turned incredibly bizarre, it obediently spread out its power, making ripples appear under his feet when he moved forward. With the bald crane's power, Su Ming wanted to force his way out of the place which caused him to be unhappy and raised that strange anger in his heart.

He was afraid that if he remained for a moment longer, he would be unable to suppress his anger and cause his other personality to appear.

"Your family name is Su; your name was given to you by your grandfather. In your body flows the blood of the Abyss Builders. This is a reality you cannot change. I can understand your resentment. I will use what I can to make up for the past. I..."

The figure spoke in anguish, but before it could finish, Su Ming stopped once more. Even the ripples beneath his feet dissipated. His hair instantly turned red, and a wave of madness appeared in his eyes. This was the Su Ming with the destructive personality.

However, this time, the red-haired Su Ming did not want to bring forth slaughter and destruction. Instead, he wanted to vent out the endless resentment buried in the depths of his heart. At the instant his hair turned red, Su Ming laughed loudly.

He turned around and stared at the figure. Red filled his eyes, and the crazed air about him became even more apparent.

"Make up to me? Make up to me, what a phrase! When I was a child and asked the elder where my parents were, his silence made me hesitant and fearful, and from then on, I no longer dared to ask this question. At that time, where were you? How are you going to make up for that?"

"When I watched my companions returning to their houses with their parents whenever the sun set, I was the only one who went back to my house alone. When I was staring at the moon quietly, where were you? How are you going to make up for that?"

"When I was a teenager, I watched the sky time and again on Dark Mountain, imagining that one day, my parents would come and pick me up. Where were you then?! How are you going to make up for that?!"

"When I was bullied by my companions, mocked for having no parents, when Lei Chen fought against them every single time, where were you?! How are you going to make up for that??!!"

"Make it up to me? What a phrase! You want my resentment to disappear with such simple words?"

"This is hilarious, so hilarious, it's so utterly absurd. I'd like to ask you, Su Xuan Yi, when I found out that everything around me was just an illusion created by someone else, how do you think I felt? Can you make it up for my sadness and confusion?!"

"When I discovered that I had gone through thirty something cycles of my life in the same Dark Mountain, can you imagine how I felt? Are you going to make it up for that feeling of being deceived by everyone too??!!"

"When I discovered that I was just a soul in Dark Mountain and my body was used as the core of a Rune and a tool for cultivation practices, do you know the cold chill that ran through me in the darkness? Are you going to make up for that as well?!"

"When Di Tian manipulated me time and time again, controlling my destiny repeatedly, where were you?! You have no right to tell me you're going to make it up to me!!"

"When I was forced to leave Dark Mountain and got thrown into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, when I was lying in Crimson Flame Planet like a corpse, where were you?"

"And this is even more laughable. When I had already told myself that my parents were no longer around, I found with an aching heart that my mother was lying in the fifth kiln. I can understand her predicament, and I won't resent her, because even after she died, she still held me so that I could feel a mother's warmth."

"But you, where were you? You let a child who thought he did not have parents learn that he's actually not an orphan, but this isn't something that would bring excitement or surprised delight to him! You never felt it before, so you don't understand, but I do. It brings only... extreme pain and confusion!!!"

Chapter 1098 That One Look... 5

The crimson-haired Su Ming threw his head back and laughed. His laughter was filled with madness along with the resentment he had accumulated over the course of countless years. It was a resentment that came from since he was in Dark Mountain, and right then, he had had allowed it to erupt for the first time.

The resentment in his outburst reverberated in the chamber, causing the figure with its back turned towards Su Ming to remain silent as he trembled slightly.

"Make it up to me? What are going to do to make it up to me? How are you going to make it up to me?!" Su Ming swung his arm with red filled eyes. When he turned around, ripples immediately appeared under his feet, and he took a step into the air.

"The fifth kiln where my mother is belongs to me. From now on, I will protect her. You... are unworthy!" With those words, he disappeared from the chamber with a bang.

The final three words were like an invisible sharp sword that stabbed into the person, causing him to tremble and lower his head with blood trickling down the corners of his mouth.

It fell on the ground and dyed the rattling drum. It also dyed the purple wooden sword that was the size of a palm beside it. That wooden sword was something he had nourished for countless years and was prepared to give it to his son as a gift, a present that symbolized his apology and his desire to make it up to him.

If Su Ming could see the sword, he would recognize it. It was the one he'd carved when he was young, and when he toyed with it, he even told Lei Chen in a heroic manner unique to children that he would walk down the path of Berserkers: fly in the sky and charge through the ground, and with the wooden sword, he would travel through the entire land.

Blood fell on the wooden sword and fused into its lines. The figure stared at it blankly, then closed its eyes in anguish.

The chamber might be Dao Chen's isolation grounds and its protection might be so incredibly terrifying that it was one of the few most tightly defended spots in True Morning Dao World, but the bald crane's power in disregarding all Runes could weaken

the defensive power even in this place. However, it was not enough to allow Su Ming to leave without any damage.

But Su Xuan Yi did not want the Rune in the place to deliver any backlash on Su Ming. At the instant Su Ming left, he had deactivated almost all the Runes and seals in the place.

This was the first time the seal over the Rune was dissipated over a course of countless years, but Su Ming did not know that.

When he left the chamber, he did not see the figure with his back turned towards him touching the rattling drum with trembling hands once he left. The man had tears trickling down his cheeks from his shut eyes.

Neither did he see the shining seals on the trembling body.

"Is the plan to restore the Abyss Builders to their glory more important... or my family?" Light murmurs came from the figure's mouth, betraying their speaker's endless fatigue.

Su Ming left. He did not take with him any power, nor did he ask for any divine abilities, and neither did he ask about anything, because at that moment, he was his crazed, red-haired self. With resentment and anger he could not force down, he walked out of the isolation grounds, and when he appeared, he was standing on the altar.

Sang stood by his side. Dao Lin and Dao Hua had also returned at some unknown point in time. At that moment, they had their eyes closed in the distance as if they were meditating, but in truth, their bodies and souls had been frozen in time.

With red in his eyes, Su Ming cast a glance at Sang. He did not speak, but walked down the altar. A ruthless desire filled his whole body. He wanted to vent his anger, but could not find a target to do so.

At that moment, Su Ming was madness personified. There was not a single bit of rationality left in him. With just the tiniest spark, a sea of fire would erupt from him... and he would not care about any consequences of his actions!

Sang looked at Su Ming, then sighed. He had long since predicted this outcome... because he knew Su Ming.

With a sigh, he swung his arm, and the air immediately distorted. An invisible gust of wind swept up Su Ming, Dao Lin, and Dao Hua. They disappeared from the place and returned... to the place where the Anointment Ceremony was held!

"My young La Su has grown up."

Sang shook his head. There was a hint of sentimentality in his eyes, along with a kindly love that Su Ming did not see. He stared at Su Ming's figure leaving into the distance, and after a long while, he raised his foot to step into the Rune on the altar. He disappeared, and when he reappeared, he was already in Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds.

"Master, he... has left." Sang stared at the still trembling body in front of him, sighed in his heart, and lowered his head.

The figure was silent for a moment before it asked slowly with fatigue in its voice, "Sang, is restoring the Abyss Builders' glory more important, or is my family more important? If you were me... how would you choose?"

Sang too fell silent. After some time, he lifted his head and stared at the figure before speaking in a soft voice.

"Master, I will never forget your kindness to me. Even if I am not an Abyss Builder, for you, I can overturn Morning Dao and do everything that you ask me to do. Because... you are my Master.

"Similarly... for Su Ming, I can give up on everything for him... because he is the young La Su I watched grow up. My whole life is only for the two of you." He did not answer Su Xuan Yi's question directly, but did so in a roundabout fashion.

With his eyes shut, Su Xuan Yi fell silent. After a long, long time, the purple wooden sword in front of him flashed with light and charged towards Sang.

"Deliver this sword to him..."

"Can he... control this sword?" Sang hesitated for a moment before he cast a glance at the seemingly normal purple wooden sword.

Su Xuan Yi was silent for a moment, then whispered, "He should have lived happily without knowing or understanding anything. He could have lived his lives happily. Even if they were fake, he could have still been happy.

"But he chose another path. This path is full of hardships and trials, and he has... only walked a small portion of it. There is also a limit to how much I can help him. If he can control this sword, then he will be able to move forward through his path at a faster pace in the future. In fact... he would even be able to walk out of Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

"If he can't control it... it will still be a good thing,"

In silence, Sang nodded.

.....

In the air above the spot at the center of the nine continents in the first plane in Morning Dao Sect, the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, and Black Turtle had four continents on their backs. The Azure Dragon was at the center.

There was a large number of tables on the four continents, and an Anointment Ceremony was about to take place.

There were less than one million out of the ten million cultivators from Morning Dao Sect who were worthy of sitting on the Azure Dragon's continent. These one million people were standing by the sides of the tables.

The remaining cultivators were all at the spot used for the Anointment Ceremony. They had yet to possess the right to step on the Azure Dragon's continent.

Located in three different directions from the Azure Dragon's continent were the Vermilion Bird, White Tiger, and Black Turtle's continents. As the beasts roared, there were three gigantic cracks in the air above them expanding as the lightning in them swam about.

Around the three cracks were twenty-four Sect Masters keeping the lightning in control. The three Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing were each on one of the continents.

People walked out of the crack above the Black Turtle's crack. The person in the lead was the old man from True Spirit Hell World, the Fourth Great World. He was dressed in a blue robe, and the moment he stepped out, Reverend Zi Long followed swiftly behind him.

"We welcome the Fourth True World!" one of the twenty-four Sect Masters around the crack above the Black Turtle's continent immediately said. The near one million cultivators on the Azure Dragon's continent wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed towards the Black Turtle's continent.

"Fourth True World!"

The voices from the near one million people were like thunder. When they echoed in the air, the old man in blue from the Fourth True World smiled. He wrapped his fist in his palm towards the twenty-four Sect Masters beside the crack. Behind him, Reverend Zi Long and the one thousand something cultivators from the Fourth True World all wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed deeply.

"My fellow Daoists, you are too polite. Congratulations on anointing your Dynasts, Morning Dao Sect. I have prepared a congratulatory gift for them." The old man in blue smiled and swept his gaze past the twenty-four Sect Masters before finally looking at Sect Master Ri who was one of the three strongest people in Morning Dao Sect.

"Old friend, I hope you are well."

"Brother Tan, you are as elegant as always. This way, please!" A smile appeared on Sect Master Ri's face, and he pointed with his right hand towards the Black Turtle's continent. The old man in blue smiled faintly. As he nodded, he brought Reverend Zi Long and the one thousand something cultivators behind him to the Black Turtle's continent.

Reverend Zi Long's eyes shone while he scrutinized the crowd on the Azure Dragon's continent. With his level of cultivation, he could see everything there at one glance. He looked like he was searching for something, but in the end, he cast his eyes at the spot in the distance.

At that moment, a chilling presence erupted from the crack above the White Tiger's continent. At the same time, ancient bronze swords charged out with arrogance and an overbearing attitude. There were tens of thousands of them, and for a short period of time, they filled the entire area. In the end, two old men so old they looked as if they could not open their eyes walked out.

These two old men had sullen expressions, and when they walked out, they turned their heads and cast a glance at Sect Master Yue of the three Sect Masters standing among the twenty-four other Sect Masters by the crack. A cold sneer appeared on their lips.

Sect Master Yue had a smile on his face and wrapped his fist in his palm to greet them.

The two old men, You and Ming let out cold snorts. Without a single word, they charged towards the White Tiger's continent with the tens of thousands of ancient bronze swords. They descended instantly, but none of the cultivators disembarked. Only You and Ming as well as the middle-aged man in Life Realm previously tasked to fend against the Barren Lands of Divine Essence stepped on the White Tiger's continent.

"Welcome, True Sacred Yin World," one of the twenty-four Sect Masters said with an imposing voice. Once he spoke, the one million cultivators on the Azure Dragon's continent sported odd expressions, but they still wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed to the White Tiger's continent.

"I'm not important enough to receive your greeting. Where is Dao Kong?" the old Ming said coldly and flatly. His voice had a rotting presence to it, but the instant he spoke, the crack in the air above the Vermilion Bird's continent suddenly let a shocking dragon's roar pass through it. A gigantic Abyss Dragon extended its huge head from the crack. When it rushed out, a thousand something Abyss Dragons behind it flew out as well.

Sitting on the first and largest Abyss Dragon was the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World. By his side... was Yu Xuan. A complicated look flashed briefly through her eyes before her expression returned to apathy that made it look like her heart was dead.

"We welcome the Emperor of Abyss' True World!"

All three Great True Worlds had arrived, and they were all waiting... for the arrival of the Morning Dao Sect's Dynasts.

Chapter 1099 That One Look... 6

"Haha! Congratulations on anointing your Dynasts, Morning Dao Sect. I look forward to how majestic they will become. This time, I came on behalf of my father to congratulate you and become acquainted with Morning Dao Sect's Dynasts," the handsome third prince said while standing on a gigantic Abyss Dragon. He did not even need to show his cultivation base show for his presence alone to be peerless.

He came from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, the only one who had Abyss Dragons.

As the twenty-four Sect Masters from Morning Dao Sect smiled, the one thousand Abyss Dragons circled above the Vermilion Bird's continent. The cultivators from the Emperor of Abyss' True World standing on them descended after the third prince grabbed Yu Xuan by his side and landed first.

When they left the one thousand Abyss Dragons, the beasts immediately roared towards the sky, deafening the crowd. Their eyes shone with a fierce light, and they glared at the four Saint Beasts who supported the continents in Morning Dao Sect.

"Shut up," the third prince said faintly. When he spoke, it looked as if one thousand invisible hands had seized the one thousand Abyss Dragons and cut off their roars.

This scene immediately caused the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect to look at him askance, but naturally, there were a few people who could tell that the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World was putting on a show.

Abyss Dragons were not ordinary creatures. They possessed intelligence akin to that of a normal person and would naturally not roar like wild beasts in this sort of situation. It was clear that the third prince had asked them to do this in advance so that he could show his power.

"Welcome, my fellow Daoists from the True Worlds. We welcome you in our ceremony here in Morning Dao Sect. Today is the day of the Anointment Ceremony. Everyone..." the seventy-two Sect Masters in the sky had spread out at that moment to surround the area. Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing stood in the distance with smiles on their faces. The person who spoke was Sect Master Yue.

However, before he could finish speaking, a hoarse, cold snort cut him off.

Tens of thousands of ancient bronze swords shone with a sharp light above the White Tiger's continent. Among the many tables on the continent stood the Old You and Ming along with the middle-aged man in Life Realm. The one who spoke was Old Ming, and his words were brusque. "I'll ask a second time, where is Dao Kong?!"

When he spoke, his voice was like thunder that reverberated in all directions. It immediately caused the people from the Fourth True World who were on the Black Turtle's continent to look at him askance. Even the people from the Emperor of Abyss' True World on the Vermilion Bird's continent looked over.

All of them had heard Dao Kong's name. Some of them were as calm as ever, some adapted odd expressions, while some smiled faintly, looking as if they were ready for an entertaining show.

"Dao Kong? The one who destroyed the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence in one go? I heard before that he is one of the Dynasts in Morning Dao Sect," the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World said languidly while smiling faintly.

His words might have seemed ordinary, but in truth, there was no doubt that he was just fanning the flames. After all, once the prideful third prince had learned of what Dao Kong did, he was in a state of shock for a long time. Even though he refused to believe in this matter, there was a strange jealousy growing in him.

By his side, Yu Xuan remained numb. Not a single change in her expression could be detected. It did not matter to her whether it was Dao Kong or anyone else, none of them could cause her heart to stir even a single bit.

Among the ones from the Fourth True World was an old man Lian Shan who kept a smile on his face. His thoughts could not be read, but by his side, Reverend Zi Long had a slightly complicated expression on his face. He sighed lightly.

The destruction of the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and the appearance of the fifth kiln were more than enough. If he did not understand these hints and did not know that the person he'd met before was the current Dynast Dao Kong, he would be unworthy of his level of cultivation and would not have the right to be known by the others as Reverend Zi Long.

Everything that happened in the fifth kiln and the fifth ocean were things that would be difficult for him to forget in his life, especially in regards to Dao Kong who'd risen to such power. A hint of admiration formed in the depths of his heart towards that man.

"Right now, we are holding our Anointment Ceremony, so Old Ming, please control yourself a little. The Dao Kong you wish to see is about to arrive soon," Sect Master Yue said flatly after casting a cold glance at You and Ming of True Sacred Yin World.

The Old Ming let out a cold bark of laughter, but he did not speak. His previous words were just to show the other True Worlds True Sacred Yin World's domineerance and that... they would absolutely not let this matter go so easily.

It also made the other True Worlds who wanted to interfere to think carefully before they acted.

"The Anointment Ceremony starts now. We welcome the three Great Dynasts of Morning Dao Sect!" Elder Yue's voice was calm.

When it echoed in the air, he raised his arms and swung them. The world immediately roared. When a loud bang shook the area, three long arcs descended from the sky.

They immediately attracted the attention of all the cultivators in the area, especially those from True Sacred Yin World. They even looked over with killing intent in their eyes.

Compared to the calmness exuded by the old man in blue, Reverend Zi Long immediately fixed his gaze on the three long arcs, then locked onto the purple long arc at the center.

The third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World looked over coldly. By his side, Yu Xuan looked ahead. Her gaze was empty as if her soul was not inside her body.

With a loud bang, all three long arcs descended. Once they did so and the light from them grew to a dazzling degree, voice came from the Azure Dragon's continent and the space beneath it.

"Greetings, Your Highnesses!"

The tumbling voices could have drowned out thunder. As they reverberated in the air, the seventy-five scattered Sect Masters wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed together to the three long arcs which had descended.

When the dazzling light spread out, the purple, red, and orange lights instantly reached a dazzling degree before they vanished to reveal Dao Kong, Dao Lin, and Dao Hua!

Around Dao Hua's body were nine lotuses. The power of those in Solar Kalpa Realm spread from him due to him not attempting to hide even a single bit of it. There was arrogance on his face, along with excitement.

As for Dao Lin, he had twelve lotuses surrounding him. The power of those in Mastery Realm spread out from him, causing him to instantly become the center of attention.

However, their ability to capture the other people's attention had only lasted for an instant before everyone's eyes were drawn to Su Ming.

Long red hair, bloodshot eyes, bloodthirstiness in his crazed gaze, eighteen lotuses which should have been white but had now been dyed blood-red and were shining with a crimson light that wrought fear to the other people's hearts.

This was Su Ming when the emotions he'd suppressed all his life burst out and the desire for destruction filled every part of his body. There was a strong malicious air about him!

His appearance instantly made him the center of attention, attracting the gazes of all the people in the area. An arrogant, domineering presence filled with an air of those with an absolute disregard for laws spread out with a bang from the crimson-haired Su Ming.

The domineering will was a madness belonging to those who would kill the moment they arrived at a disagreement with someone else. His arrogance was a madness that allowed him to destroy an entire camp from a True World. The presence belonging to those with an absolute disregard for laws was a terrifying attitude that put not mind to any sort of consequences.

All those who met Su Ming's gazes felt their hearts tremble. Su Ming's gaze, which was filled with destruction, shot through their hearts like arrows, and they sucked in sharp breaths of air.

It was especially so for the cultivators from Morning Dao Sect. They might have witnessed everything regarding Su Ming's journey, but they had never seen him with his hair red. When they saw him at that moment, their hearts trembled.

Yu Xuan was looking ahead blankly. Even when Su Ming appeared, she did not lift her head. Nothing in this place could stir up her emotions. She might have stepped into Morning Dao Sect, but while this place might be True Morning Dao World, it was not Yin Death Region, not the land of Berserkers. The ninth summit she was familiar with was not there... and neither was he.

That was why she did not lift her head.

However, when she noticed that the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World had sucked in a sharp breath upon raising his head in front of her, she looked up as well and saw a person standing in the air like the sun at noon. The two people beside him seemed to have become like green leaves used as decorations for him to stand out more. While examining him, she saw his red eyes.

That one glance caused Yu Xuan's body to tremble furiously. She fixed her gaze on Su Ming, and the apathy in her instantly disappeared, as if her soul had swiftly returned to her body during that moment. The lustreless look in her eyes vanished, replaced by a hint of spiritedness and rapid breathing.

She did not dare believe her own eyes. Her body trembled. She gripped the corners of her sleeves tightly. During that moment, she forgot everything and everyone around her. There was only one person in her eyes, only Su Ming.

The person looked unfamiliar yet he felt incredibly familiar. That familiarity was buried deep in her soul, and it was a beautiful memory she would never forget in her life.

Su Ming's appearance might have changed, but his soul had not changed. His presence might be different from the past... but Yu Xuan's will had been in the kiss to deliver the breath to complete his soul. That breath was in his soul, and they... had long since fused together.

He could deceive everyone else, but he could not deceive Yu Xuan!

She bit her bottom lip, and a smile gradually appeared on her face. It was a smile that had not graced her face no matter whether she was sleeping or awake during the course of the past one thousand something years. There was liveliness in that smile along with mischievousness, deep and fond remembrance, and gentleness that would not disappear. It was as if she had been revived and fully woken up from apathy. She smiled, and her smile was incredibly beautiful, unforgettable to anyone who caught at least a glimpse of it.

It was an expression that belonged to Yu Xuan. It was a smile that was mischievous and adorable, and smile that was like dazzling fireworks in her glistening eyes moist with tears.

She stared at Su Ming.

The obsession in that look of hers seemed to have been noticed by Su Ming's currently crazed heart. It caused him to lower his head, and his gaze shot through the one thousand Abyss Dragons towards the Vermilion Bird's continent where resided the people from the Emperor of Abyss' True World. Right there was also Yu Xuan, staring at him from behind the third prince.

That one look...

Su Ming jolted. He saw a figure that even when he had sunken into madness and his heart was filled with the desire for destruction, he would still be unable to forget!

His madness was a bloodlust to destroy all the living, but that figure had been branded in his mind so deep that even if the universe collapsed, he would still be unable to wipe it away from his memories.

"Do you know why I'm called Yu Xuan...? The meaning for Xuan is daylily, and it is a type of flower that forgets sadness. I'm a daylily in the rain. This is the name my mother gave me. She wanted me to forget the sadness in my life and be happy forever... My

mother is calling me now. I'll be leaving to reunite with my mother... Before I leave, I'll give you a gift."

The kiss in the past had turned into the long look at that moment. If the galaxy was destroyed and the broken shards arranged into a canvas, what would appear on them would be her face...

Chapter 1100 My Right Hand 1

That one kiss, this one look.

Time seemed to have fused with the air to turn it into yellowing rice paper. Color seemed to have withered away, like time had turned it into dull ink, but the smile on the face formed by the fragmented pieces of Su Ming's memories on the canvas was still the same as before...

The song in the land of Berserkers had ended, and the audience had left... The fragments of his memories had fallen all over the floor in a wretched state and crushed a heart filled with happiness. Callousness lasts eternally during the night, and in endless loneliness, she had closed her eyes. She refused to wake up.

This was Yu Xuan.

Yet there had always been a hint of fond remembrance in her gasping for breath through the passage of time, but it could no longer find the brightness from the past. In the darkness of her slumber, midnight lasted for a long time. The night was cold, but the silk blanket was thin, and she wondered whether the person she liked would be cold too.

That one kiss, this one look.

She could no longer talk about her feelings. When she turned her head back, she felt as if she had left the past behind. She was alone while she leaned against dusk, but she could not see the its color. She only mumbled in her heart and lamented how unpredictable destiny was.

This was also Yu Xuan.

The crimson-haired Su Ming stood in midair with everyone watching him, but his gaze was fixed on one person. It was as if time had stopped, as if there was no longer any other form of life in the area around them... like she was the only one.

The separation of one thousand something years has lasted for a long time. When Su Ming was in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, Xu Hui's company, Bai Ling's gentle

but aloof words... all of these things had made him forget many things, but at the depths of his heart, there was always a small white flower in the rain, and the name of that flower was daylily.

She had kissed him once. When their gazes met each other's after a long separation, the determination and gentleness in the girl's eyes and the sadness as well as madness in Su Ming's eyes was a scene that would never fade away in the passage of time.

He still remember that one kiss that marked their parting. It was not a separation where someone left into the distance, but a separation by death. From then on, there should have been no longer any girl in the world who was so spirited and would smile in such a manner.

Once she kissed him, she stepped on the wind and slowly let her eyes fall shut. Her petite figure fused into the air, because she knew that once she left... they would most likely not meet even in their next life.

"You are Dao Kong?"

A cold voice laced with killing intent traveled through the air like a gust of sinister wind from the White Tiger's continent. It reverberated in the air, and was like an extremely sharp blade which wanted to slice through all enmity.

However, no matter how sharp that blade was, it could not cut down the only thing within Su Ming's field of vision at that moment...

He had ignored the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World, which was why he did not see the prince turning his head back at that moment and noticing how peculiar Yu Xuan was acting. He did not see how stunned he was by that breathtaking sight before his expression turned dark. He could not stand the sight of the smile that had not appeared for a long, long time on Yu Xuan's face.

It was a pity that the smile was not directed towards him. As the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World slowly turned his head around and saw the gaze shared between Su Ming and Yu Xuan, rage rose in his eyes.

He snorted coldly, then right in front of Su Ming's face, he raised his right hand and seized Yu Xuan's neck. He squeezed it tightly and yanked her to his side, even sniffing the center of her brows.

He lifted his chin, and with a hint of derision and provocation in his eyes, he lifted his head... to look towards Su Ming.

The crimson-haired Su Ming could disregard Old Ming's voice from the White Tiger's continent and not bother with the emotions of all the other people around him, but when he saw pain on Yu Xuan's face when the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True

World seized her as she still tried to maintain the smile on her face... he descended into madness!

The crimson-haired Su Ming had always been outrageous and showed complete disregard for the laws as well as any consequences. The strong desire to vent his anger he'd suppressed in his heart when he was in Su Xuan Yi's isolation grounds was something that could erupt from within him at any moment. With just a small spark, it could make the crimson-haired Su Ming act with reckless abandon.

If the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World had not done anything, then under the effect of Yu Xuan's smile and gaze, Su Ming would have slowly calmed down until he returned to normal. If that had happened... then perhaps there wouldn't have been much slaughter on that day.

However, the ignorant third prince and his foolish action became... the spark that ignited Su Ming's madness!

He became the spark that released... the madness that had been hidden in Su Ming's heart since he returned from the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. It was something that would push him to destroy the entire camp of the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World at the moment of the slightest disagreement!

A monstrous sea of fire erupted from Su Ming's body with a bang. It swept through the entire area with a loud bang. Immediately, Dao Lin and Dao Hua were swept away together. They coughed up blood at the same time, and the Flourishing Lotuses on their bodies instantly activated. Only because of that were they not killed under the impact of the sea of fire as they fell backwards.

At the instant the sea of fire erupted, the people from True Morning Dao World on the Azure Dragon's continent immediately stood up and stared at the sky in shock. At the same time, the expression of all the Sect Masters in Morning Dao Sect surrounding the area immediately changed. It was especially obvious if one looked at Sect Masters Ri, Yue, and Xing. When they looked towards Su Ming, they frowned.

They were very aware of True Sacred Yin World's intention for coming to this place, and they had also thought about how to handle the situation. Since Dao Kong had already become a Dynast, they could not allow True Sacred Yin World to kill him. This was something that True Sacred Yin World knew very well as well. If worse came to worst, they would just punish him slightly, and at most, they would just have to compensate them a little.

As long as they showed enough respect to True Sacred Yin World and Su Ming chose to suffer a little, they could minimize the problem. As for how they would choose to completely solve it, they had another method to do so.

However, Su Ming had chosen to release a sea of fire at that moment, shattering their arrangements in an instant. As the three Sect Masters frowned and were about to rebuke him, Su Ming suddenly let out a string of maniacal laughter. The sea of fire around him surged into the sky. This fire was not the fire from Flame Fiends' Progenitor, but the flames of resentment suppressed in the crazed Su Ming's heart. On a certain level, this fire was similar to the flames belonging to the Resentful Wei.

Almost the instant the sea of fire surged to the heavens, Su Ming took a swift step forward and turned into a long arc to charge... towards the Vermilion Bird's continent, where resided the people from the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

The expression of the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World changed drastically at that moment. With a sullen face, he swung his arm, and the one thousand Abyss Dragons floating around the Vermilion Bird's continent roared simultaneously as they charged towards Su Ming.

This scene caused the people in the area to be stunned, especially the Sect Masters. They had thought that Su Ming was targeting True Sacred Yin World. In fact, True Sacred Yin World had already made preparations the moment the sea of fire erupted from Su Ming's body. However... he did not spare the White Tiger's continent even a glance. He just charged straight towards the Vermilion Bird's continent, where resided the people from the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

All of this might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, it took only an instant. As the sea of fire surged into the sky, Su Ming had already collided against the Abyss Dragons which had rushed towards him.

The Abyss Dragon in the lead was the third prince's stead. The mighty pressure spreading out from this dragon, which was the largest among all of them, made it clear that it was equivalent to those in Mastery Realm.

Yet it was an Abyss Dragon. No matter how great their levels of cultivation were, they were Abyss Dragons whose souls were controlled for generations by the Emperor of Abyss' True World!

It was also only this sort of level of cultivation which could allow the dragon to become the stead of the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World. The dragon's body was filled with an ancient presence. At that moment, when it rushed towards Su Ming, it opened its ghastly mouth and let out a shocking roar.

RAWR!

The crimson-haired Su Ming did not stop for even a single moment. At the instant he was about to collide with the incoming Abyss Dragon, he lifted his right hand and threw a punch at them.

With a loud bang, Su Ming's punch fell on the lead Abyss Dragon, and it immediately shuddered. It fell back from the force of the attack. Its flesh and blood trembled, and with a loud whoosh, tens of thousands of wounds tore through its body apart. Soon after, a large amount of blood gushed while its body fell backwards.

In just the span of a few breaths, all the flesh and blood from the dragon's entire body were separated from its bones. When it fell back, a blood fog surrounded the dragon. All of its flesh and blood were destroyed, and what remained... was only an empty skeletal frame. Even its life force and soul had been destroyed under the rebound caused by Su Ming's punch.

With a loud bang, the skeletal frame scattered on the ground, right in front of the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World. It caused the third prince to shudder, and he pulled Yu Xuan in front of him. He stood up as well, with disbelief on his face, his breathing quickening.

"Abyss Dragon formation, stimulate your life force, kill that person!"

The remaining one thousand Abyss Dragons in the sky were only in the later stage of World Plane Realm. They were chosen carefully by the third prince, which was why their levels of cultivation were the same. At that moment, the one thousand Abyss Dragons roared towards the sky and charged towards Su Ming together.

While doing so, they connected with each other in a bizarre manner. Each Abyss Dragon bit down on another Abyss Dragon's tail. Like that, they formed a circle, instantly surrounding Su Ming who was charging madly to the Vermilion Bird's continent.

Everything had happened so suddenly that the crowd in the area had only just registered what had happened at that moment. It was especially so for the True Morning Dao disciples on the Azure Dragon's continent. They immediately flew up and had their cultivation bases erupt from their bodies.

This was True Morning Dao World, and the one surrounded by one thousand Abyss Dragons at that moment was Dao Kong, their Dynast who had just been anointed moments ago!

During the challenge, they could fight and even try to kill each other, but when there were external enemies, they were fellow members who would move as one! This was a teaching carved into them over countless years in Morning Dao Sect. It was etched so deep into the bones of the disciples of Morning Dao Sect that it had become a brand in their souls!

The people from the Fourth Great True World on the Black Turtle's continent remained composed. A glint shone in the old man in blue's eyes. He did not open his mouth to speak though. By his side, Reverend Zi Long frowned. He might have fought against Su Ming before, but in the end, they had formed a strange type of friendship between them.

They might not have spoken about this friendship, but it existed. If they had to speak of a source for it, then perhaps it was born from a type of guilt and respect in Reverend Zi Long. He felt guilty for leaving when he was in the fifth ocean, and he respected Su Ming for doing all the shocking things.

"Morning Dao Sect, look at you. I wonder whether this is an Anointment Ceremony, or whether this is a slaughter fest which you intend to make all of us who have come from the three Great True Worlds observe? The Dynast you have anointed is a lunatic.

"This person could destroy an entire camp from True Sacred Yin World stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Now, with just the slightest bit of disagreement, he went mad and killed an Abyss Dragon, and judging by his actions, he looks like he wants to kill our fellow Daoist from the Emperor of Abyss' True World. Is this really the Dynast you anointed?" Old Ming asked in derision while standing on the White Tiger's continent.

Chapter 1101 My Right Hand 2

"Morning Dao Sect disciples, stand down and sit!" Sect Master Yue said in a low voice. Yet it was like a thunderous roar, causing the Morning Dao Sect disciples whose cultivation bases had erupted and who were prepared to help Su Ming to fall silent. In a moment, they returned to the Azure Dragon's continent.

The nine million cultivators on the nine continents in the area below were also forced to a stop. They glared at the area above them and returned to their own stone platforms.

It was also during this moment that the circle formed by the one thousand Abyss Dragons started shrinking around Su Ming in the center. The speed of it was so quick that they rushed at him in the blink of an eye.

As they closed in, a gigantic, illusory dragon head took shape. Roaring, it gathered together the power of the one thousand Abyss Dragons and their burning souls. With a vast amount of life force, it charged towards Su Ming with loud booming sounds.

This was the power which erupted from the one thousand Abyss Dragons once they fused together and had all their cultivation bases as well as their power gather together. In fact, under the order of the third prince of the Emperor of Abyss' True World, an invisible flame had lit up in the Abyss Dragons' souls as well as their cultivation bases.

This was them burning their lives to have their greatest power erupt. Once they executed this attack, then even without receiving any attack, they would only have a few days left to live.

However, with this sort of price, they could use power which could even shock the heavens. In fact, this power would surpass even the one blow delivered simultaneously by one thousand cultivators in the later stage of World Plane Realm after they burned their lives!

After all, Abyss Dragons were not cultivators. They also possessed great physical strength.

If Su Ming had not gone through the trial of the Dynasts, then besides summoning the fifth kiln, he would not have had any other method to deal with this attack. He felt that this attack was just slightly weaker than the Ancient God's punch he'd faced in the battlefield.

However, since Su Ming had gone through the trial, blood-red light shone in his eyes. At the instant the huge dragon head formed by the shocking power came forth, he turned around without any hesitation so that his back was towards the incoming dragon head. He raised his right hand, and with the exact same motion of Dao Ocean's Predecessor when he controlled the body during the trial, he struck his chest with his right hand.

The instant he struck was the same moment the gigantic dragon head behind him crashed into his body. With it as the conduit, their blows landed at the same time, and a loud, booming sound rose into the sky.

Su Ming jolted. He coughed up a mouthful of blood, while the gigantic dragon head behind him shuddered violently. Roars reverberated in the air, and the dragon head shattered into pieces. This was due to the rebounding force from Su Ming's still, stable body. The tremors had even caused the connection between the one thousand Abyss Dragons to disintegrate.

They all fell backwards. They roared in pain, and then their bodies shattered at the same time. Wounds tore through their bodies, and in the end... their flesh, blood, and bones were separated from each other, just like what had happened to the Abyss Dragon in Mastery Realm. The flesh and blood of the one thousand Abyss Dragons exploded as they were forced back, and with only their skeletal frames left, they fell from the sky.

A thick, bloody stench filled the area. The expression of the crazed Su Ming twisted, and his eyes grew even more bloodshot. As most of the people in the area watched in shock, he sucked in a sharp breath.

Immediately, the endless flesh and blood in the area charged towards him where they disappeared into a gigantic vortex which had suddenly appeared before the crimson-haired person.

In the depths of the vortex was the Abyss Dragon belonging to Yu Xuan which had turned into a big dog in Su Ming's storage bag. At that moment, it shuddered, and with

the same madness as Su Ming's in its eyes, it continuously sucked in the vast amount of flesh and blood.

As Abyss Dragons, they were existences who became stronger by devouring each other. However, this act of devouring each other was strictly prohibited in the Emperor of Abyss' True World. Any Abyss Dragon who did it would be killed straight away.

However, at that moment, the dragon in the storage bag no longer belonged to the Emperor of Abyss' True World, and it no longer cared!

Its wounds instantly recovered. Its cultivation base also continuously erupted, and it rose straight into Lunar Kalpa Realm from its previous level of cultivation before it reached a breakthrough and arrived in Solar Kalpa Realm. It might not have attained great completion, but it was enough to make it feel as if it had been reborn.

"I too... have an Abyss Dragon!"

Su Ming swung his arm, and a loud dragon's roar came from the vortex. It was the voice of the Abyss Dragon which belonged to Yu Xuan and also to Su Ming. It rushed out from the vortex. When it threw its head back and roared, a huge sun appeared behind it!

At the instant the Abyss Dragon appeared, another Abyss Dragon also shot out from the vortex with a roar. This Abyss Dragon was clearly much bigger than the first, but it had not a hint of imposing might in its eyes, only a sleazy look, making it clear... that this Abyss Dragon was what the bald crane had transformed into because it did not want to be left out of the limelight.

The two Abyss Dragons floated by Su Ming, their roars shaking the sky and earth. With one move, Su Ming turned into a long arc and charged towards the Vermilion Bird's continent. This scene shocked all the people in the area. It also caused the heart of the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World to tremble. As his expression twisted, he growled.

"Cultivators from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, what are you waiting for?! I'm ordering you now! Without regard for cost, no matter whether you are going to summon the Progenitor of our world or the Abyssal Nightmare by sacrificing your flesh and blood, kill him!"

"Dao Kong, what are you doing?!" Sect Master Ri shouted towards Su Ming. He lifted his foot, but just as he was about to take a step forward to put a stop to everything, Old You and Ming laughed long and hard from the White Tiger's continent.

"Such a conceited and mad person is not suited to be a Dynast in Morning Dao Sect. Since you do not clear your trash from your sect, then let the both of us help you deal with it."

Old You and Ming, the two old men who were so old that they looked as if they could not even open their eyes, chortled and jumped into the air. Their terrifying cultivation erupted with a bang from their bodies.

"Fellow Daoists from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, we will help you kill this person!" With a loud roar, the two old men charged towards Su Ming.

Sect Master Yue's foot stopped for a moment as his expression turned dark. He did not move forward.

"Haha! Thank you, Seniors You and Ming. I will certainly tell my Lord Father exactly what happened, and I will naturally repay you in the future." The third prince's spirits were lifted. He forced down the terror in his heart and stared at Su Ming with a ferocious expression.

"Huo Kui!"

The crimson-haired Su Ming charged forward with madness in him. At that moment, there was only Yu Xuan in his eyes. At the instant he spoke, ripples immediately appeared in the air. Flame Fiends' Progenitor stepped out of thin air. When he raised his right hand, the flames belonging to him instantly spread out with a bang. When they swept out in all directions, they formed one hundred thousand fireballs that swept towards the incoming cultivators from the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

"Zhu You Cai!"

Su Ming seized the air with his right hand, and the Life Inequity Spear appeared in it. Once he released his grip, the spear plunged down, and an arm instantly shot out from the air to seize it. Zhu You Cai's plump body walked out of thin air as well.

He sighed in his heart, and his huge body instantly started shrinking. In the blink of an eye, he turned into a middle-aged man with an imposing face. He tightened his grip around the Life Inequity Spear, then with a single step forward, he charged towards Old You and Ming.

"Life Inequity Spear... you..."

"Chang He, you're really the War Immortal Chang He!"

Old You and Ming's expressions changed swiftly. Besides searching for Dao Kong, they had also come to Morning Dao Sect with another task, and that was... to find True Sacred Yin World's War Immortal Chang He, their Sublime Paragon's disciple who was mentioned by the middle-aged man in Life Realm when he returned from the camp stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence!

"Chang He died in the fifth kiln. I... am Zhu You Cai!"

Zhu You Cai's eyes fell shut before he opened them once more. The power of those nearly in Death Realm erupted from his body with a bang, and he charged straight towards Old You and Ming.

When he appeared as Zhu You Cai, his power would occasionally be weak, while at other times it would be strong. However, when he adopted this form, he would never be the person who the middle-aged man from the camp of True Sacred Yin World thought possessed only Chang He's will. Instead... he would become the War Immortal who had truly attained great completion in Life Realm, and who had taken half a step into Death Realm!

However, during that moment, the War Immortal no longer belonged to True Sacred Yin World, but because of a promise, he had come to Su Ming's side!

Boom!

The battle shocked the heavens!

With Zhu You Cai holding back Old You and Ming, Flame Fiends' Progenitor killing the cultivators from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon's roars echoing towards the heavens, Su Ming turned into a long arc. Filled with madness and killing intent that seemed to be able to crush the air, he rushed towards the Vermilion Bird's continent... straight towards the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World who had injured Yu Xuan!

When the woman saw Su Ming coming towards them, a smile appeared on her face, and as she smiled, tears fell from her eyes. She knew. She always knew that Su Ming had not died.

She also knew that she would one day meet him, that there was still a possibility for them to see each other. Such things had only belonged to Yu Xuan's dreams before, but now... they had become true.

"It's you! You're not Dao Kong! You're Su Ming, the one from the land of Berserkers within True Morning Dao Sect's Yin Death Region! You're the Su Ming who that b*tch Yu Xuan got to know in the land of Berserkers! You're not Dao Kong!"

If the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World still did not understand this by then, then he would have lived his life in vain.

At the instant his voice traveled outward, the crimson-haired Su Ming had already closed in, and with one punch forward, the world roared!

A screen of light spread out from the body of the third prince from the Emperor of Abyss' True World, and it looked like a huge, overturned bowl had been placed on him. The

color of the screen of light was black, and waves of the Aura of Abyss spread out from it. A mighty pressure which could suffocate people came from the screen.

This mighty pressure surpassed those in Death Realm!

This was... the light of protection formed by the third prince's father, the Emperor of the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

A loud bang shot up.

Su Ming's fist landed on the screen of light. A powerful rebound forced Su Ming to fall back. As he coughed up blood, the air around the screen distorted. Four figures who clearly had been hiding all this while turned into four long arcs that charged towards the withdrawing Su Ming with strong killing intent.